

# THE SEDUCTION

These 3 voices of sin will  
seduce you away from God:  
The World  
Satan  
Your Flesh

BY TERRY MYERS SMITH

# The Seduction

*The Seduction*

*ELOISE GARDENIER, LEROY GARDENIER, AND  
TERRY SMITH*

THE CHRISTIAN SPIRIT PUBLISHERS, INC

PEPPERELL, MA

All Rights Reserved. No portion of this book may be published without permission of the publisher.

# Contents

## Introduction

### Part I. The World

1. Whatever They Can Imagine They Can Do
2. Fallen Giant Bully Angels
3. Gateway To Believing In the World & The Antichrist Kingdom
4. The False Religion of Jezebel: Then and Now
5. Mother of Harlots & Great Whore
6. Through The Fire
7. The Great Whore Will Be Judged
8. The Universal Whore Is Being Led By The Papacy
9. Whatever They Can Imagine They Can Do
10. Daniel's Dream of the Four Beasts
11. Babylon the Great Lion:
12. Persia: Second of Four Antichrist Empires
13. Greece: The Belly and Thighs of Brass
14. Rome: Legs of Iron/ Feet of Iron and Clay
15. Vision of Antichrist Empire Down Through the Ages
16. The Millennium

## 17. The Vile Person

### Part II. Satan

## 18. Visits from Satan

## 19. The Great Deceiver

## 20. Arch Enemy of Woman

## 21. The Bully of All Time

## 22. He Will Continue – Resist!

## 23. You Must be Freed From Occult Past

## 24. The Satanic Shell Game

## 25. The Act of Denial

## 26. The Gibeonite Ruse

## 27. Battle Against Envy & Jealousy

## 28. Perverting The Seed

## 29. The Battles of The Lord

## 30. Pharaoh of Egypt and Haman The Amalekite

## 31. Evil's Ultimate End

### Part III. The Flesh

## 32. Deliverance: The Children's Bread

## 33. King Uzziah: Reminder to Stay Humble

## 34. Our Ego Ought Not to Eclipse The Son

## 35. Love Not The Flesh

36. Beware The S.N.A.R.E.

37. Flee From These Four Worlds of Flesh

38. Mortify Therefore Your Members Which Are Upon the Earth

39. The Parable of the Lamb

Appendix

There are three enemies that try to undo our relationship with Christ. All three of these enemies must be resisted constantly as we negotiate our way through life waiting for the ultimate deliverance by Jesus from heaven.

**The Three Enemies Are:**

- 1) Satan: Satanic wickedness: i.e. Satan and his minions;
- 2) The World: i.e. all that it teaches and preaches to us from the day we are born.
- 3) Our Flesh i.e.: Self In a series of brief articles, Elisha's Outcast Eagles (EOE) presents personal evidence and testimonies confirming Satan's strategies, deceptions and accusations against us. We intend the following spiritual vignettes as ways of educating the individual soul against the subtleties and craft of man's greatest enemy. We do not wish that these 'chapters' on this "Voices of Satan - Deceit - page will frighten people, but rather arm them against so great a mortal enemy to their eternal life. We do not want to leave anyone with the impression that it is Satan alone who is responsible for our sin and the crimes against God and His love. We ourselves must take full responsibility. Though the Devil is often responsible for instigating us into a life of moral crimes by whispering fear, accusation, lust and selfishness into our ear.

It is not part of our agenda to frighten anyone either; only to give the believer the proper understanding so they will not fall prey to the Devil's tricks and devices. Satan is a great and powerful enemy. It is in every person's interest to engage him

properly and wisely in mortal combat according to the advise of  
God given to us in His Word. ...



PART I  
THE WORLD

# I. Whatever They Can Imagine They Can Do

Looking upon the conspiracy God said, “Now, they shall be able to do whatever they may imagine.”

While Nimrod is the archetype of all antichrists, so the rebellion signified by the Tower of Babel stands as the archetype of all worldly spiritual revolutions against God.

The rebels’ defiant song rose from the floor of the Euphrates Valley as, year by year, they sent levels of their clay brick tower spiraling upward majestically high into the clouds. The grandson of Ham had rallied them, goading them to not just a military and political coup against God but a moral and spiritual one. The final objective of the rebellion is to shake off God so they could rule the world themselves without enduring what they considered his meddling interference.

It had not taken the charismatic spirit of Nimrod much effort to convince the rank and file people of this unholy brave new world that they could counter any measure God might take to defeat their defiant purpose. They were taking necessary measures to avert any judgment God might impose to thwart their purpose, even if it were his plan to use another deadly flood to put down the revolution. Erecting a seven tiered tower that rose to the clouds they declared themselves safe, free of God, free from flood. Though God may try to impose edicts against violence, hate or any subversive activity against decency and

good, they could frustrate his judgments. They would make themselves safe of any reprisal or attack.

The condition of heart that God was seeking in a person was just the opposite. They amounted to those things which God had detected in the heart of Noah. They represented the sum and substance of what God approved, they were the reason why God had decided not to end his quest for the heart of the creature called Man. It was love, joy, peace, gentleness ... the things possessed by Noah that God continued to endure the rebellion of mankind.

But men wanted another spirit to lead them, one devoted to selfish lies and oppression of freedom. One that would allow them to take what they wanted, to enslave the weak and to hold nothing sacred but the whims that fed their lust. They wanted no limits put on their greed, no boundaries placed on their oozing and slimy desires. Nimrod promised them heaven, a place safe from God's judgment. He required that they only confide in him. But for this, he must be given authority over their souls. So they studied the stars for guidance.

They were taught how to commandeer the story of the redeeming Messiah with magic. They perverted the narrative of the promise which God had taught Adam, the story written in the sky, depicted in the 12 signs of the Zodiac, with their details told by the constellations. They absconded with the story and by it the first formal antichrist religion was conceived. And they believed they could tell their future with this knowledge and thereby save themselves.

But the rebels did not stop there, for the tower was to be their insurance and their refuge in case it did flood again; so God stepped in to disperse them, to put down and to disperse the mad society of the lunatic rebels.

Looking upon the conspiracy God said, "Now, they shall be able to do whatever they may imagine." In his perfect understanding, he had endowed the human race with the power to be gods. He had enriched them with knowledge and understanding, imbued their souls with the enormous responsibility of being able to speak intelligibly so they could plan and conjure a thing. He endowed them with physical abilities like hands and mobility so they could adroitly turn those concepts, ideas, hopes and conjurings into things that are, things which bear real effect upon earthly and physical realities and the breath of life itself.

Man was equipped with the liberty to come to his own conclusions. He could ignore God because he had free choice. He could tailor things according to his own whim, for his own use, thinking, declaring, inventing. He could think of it, he could eventually engineer it. Implied in God's declaration about Man is that he someday could find the key to life and live for eternity. Albeit, in a desperate unhappy state. So it was with fitting purpose of his own that God used language to put a halt to the conspiracy. The conspiracy was derailed. The woeful people were sent packing.

God did not tear down the tower however, as we would likely have done. The strange remains still stand today in the plains of Iraq as a monstrous monument testifying to the prophetic reality

that the rebellion still lives, because it most certainly survives stronger than ever in the spirit of the World today. Man, as united against God, has chugged along for these five millennia. A succession of rebellious events have come and gone among the peoples of disparate civilizations over the millennia and the centuries. Some of those civilizations are buried and gone, others are dying and some, like Rome, are in the throes of revival but they all hold in common the history of a Babel conspiracy. Yet nothing like what is happening in this hour has ever occurred. Since the revolution of technology and knowledge which ramped up two and a half centuries ago and has since reached mach speed in the last three decades, the spirit of Babel has invaded the globe knocking on the door of nuclear powers, third world countries, ancient dynasties in the east and every island on earth. The spirit can stake claim to being the actual religion of the world because it encompasses the continents and the seven seas. Now, thanks to technology, knowledge and speed the World can come together unrestrained as they once did in provincial fashion at the Tower of Babel. It is in the same spirit that Man has decided to pin all his hopes on – his science and intellect, while keeping God from interfering.

## 2. Fallen Giant Bully Angels

### Their Roots Go Back to the Antediluvian World

In other articles, The Elisha's Outcast Eagles have put a face on the harlot associating her with the first king of the earth, Nimrod. We have also shown that Roman Catholicism, under the regime of the Papacy, remains the modern fountainhead of the Whore's sorceries in this, the final days before the return of Christ.

The following historical essay takes a look into this enemy of God, peering into her origins to lend a further understanding of all that this evil phenomenon of false religion represents and the effect it has had on the mind and spirit of Christianity through its diabolical perversions of truth, its confusions and deceptions and her outright lies.

Any honest search for the origins of Mystery Babylon will conclude that her roots run much deeper than just the apostasy that has beset Christianity. She was not born out of the heresies of Roman Catholicism or the apostasy of fundamentalist Christianity – far from it.

False Religion is far more ancient than that going back to before the Great Flood that inundated the Earth. To locate the inception of false religion we must go to the deepest revealings of antiquity. Elsewhere we have shown that the name “Mystery, Babylon the Great” is synonymous with false religion, names used in Holy Scripture like: The Great Whore, and the concept of an

Anti-bride of Christ indicates that she and her concoction of false religion is the antithesis of godliness and truth. The apostle who penned the book of Revelation, John, is told that The Great Whore has caused the whole earth to become drunk by her spiritual whoredoms.

*“I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters:*

*With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.” Rev 17:1-2*

The next verse says that The Whore is *“drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus.”* Right from the start, and by this we mean the time from Man’s fall, this mother of all false religion has been the bane of those who would worship God in spirit and in truth. By her sorceries and witchcraft Mystery Babylon has cast a spell over the inhabitants of the earth. She has been the great persecutor and killer of the saints. Her spirit has tried to destroy the true religion, and where she could not destroy it she has tried to muddle or confuse it, succeeding in far too many situations world-wide, inside and outside Jewish and Christian realms. One of her main purposes has been to put just enough of a twist on the true instruction and word of God so as to nullify its desired effect. This is why she veils her religion in mystery.

God, the creator of all truth is just the opposite. He does His work in the light. It is open for all to see and all to accept. Satan always does his work in the dark. He never reveals the true

intentions or real purposes of his religion. Confusion, mystery and secretive, fraternal rites are some of the telltale signs of false religion. (Break down the words – Mystery: secret and Babylon or Babel: confusion – and one gets secret confusion.) She is a living spirit with all that comes with a living ‘personage’. Her ultimate purpose is to get men to be exclusive and secretive about God by hiding their devious religion under a pile of confusion, secret initiation rites, occult rituals, carnal sacraments and rational explanations. Thus, Mystery Babylon has been the plague of true worship from the very start.

Interestingly, the title Mystery Babylon was not conferred on The Whore until just five chapters short of the Bible’s end. At first glance, it would appear that Mystery Babylon’s origins are in the Tower of Babel, which was built by Nimrod around 23-2100 BC. But to find The Whore’s source we must go back even further in antiquity. Back we must go. Back as far as the very beginning of civilization. Back further than the first known cultures of the Sumerians, Hittites and Egyptians. We must go further back than Noah and The Flood. We must consider the days when giants and fallen angels walked the earth and the world was entirely shrouded in wickedness and rocked with violence. It was a time when God said, *“the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the LORD that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart.”* In fact, to find the origins of lies and false ways we must go back to the first



confrontation between Satan and Man. We have to go back to the Garden of Eden and man's fall from grace.

### **Her Opposition of True Religion Began Right Away**

All of the commands and promises of God have been connected to the coming Redeemer who would save Adam and Eve – and their seed – from the effects of their fall from grace. Adam and Eve ate from the forbidden tree, thereby showing their capability and willingness to disobey God. God had given them control and jurisdiction over every creature and part of the Garden. For their own good He denied them access to the “*tree of the knowledge of good and evil*”. His command was simple. “*But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*” In this respect, true religion, in the beginning, was no different than today. Trust God, take Him at His Word and obey Him. So too, false religion has remained basically the same since that day in the Garden. Satan perverted God's purpose in keeping Adam and Eve from the tree of knowledge by telling Eve that God was jealous and wished only to deprive them of becoming gods, because He did not want them to become like Him. The Serpent told Eve that God was a liar and that she would become like God if she ate the fruit. Eve was beguiled by this subtle deceiver and believed his perversion of the truth. Adam knew better, but fearing his wife, went along with the Devil's lies anyway and ate the forbidden fruit. The two foundations of sin were seen in Adam and Eve; one was deceived, one sinned willfully. That very first confrontation between true and false religion was only a temporary victory for Satan,

however. God had already drawn up a plan to save the day. From the very start God's plan was to create a tried and tested creature that would never be swayed by evil even though they had full knowledge of its temptations and deceptions. God's plan of salvation began immediately. The Lord declared a curse on all three of the parties.

### **First He dealt with the Devil**

*“And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:*

*And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.” Gen 3:14-15*

### **Then the woman,**

*“Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.” Gen 3:16*

### **Then the man,**

*“And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life;*

*Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;*

*In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.” Gen 3:17-19*

In verse fifteen God promised to send them a champion, a hero, who would restore them to their former relationship with God and return them to a paradise even greater than the Garden of Eden. Their offspring would be bruised by the Devil but ultimately would entirely destroy the serpent and punish him for his lies and blasphemies. This was the promise of a Savior, the promise of God’s only Son, the promise of Jesus. To believe this Adam and Eve required faith. They now had to do what they had failed to do in the Garden. They had to believe God and trust Him. They were required to believe what righteous Job would testify to centuries later, “*I know my redeemer lives*”. They simply had to perform what the lifelong search of the preacher from Ecclesiastes finally uncovered, “*hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man.*” However, until the promised Redeemer came to cover them once and for all with His own shed blood, God had to cover their shame and sin with the skin of an innocent animal. That was done when God took an animal from the Garden and slew it to make clothing for them. Innocent blood from then on had to be shed to make atonement for any and all disobedience and rebellion.

### **Abel – True Religion / Cain – False Religion**

Blood sacrifice was God’s one command to Adam and his sons Cain and Abel. In anticipation of the coming Savior, which would

be fulfilled in Jesus some sixty generations later, they were to sacrifice a blood offering of an innocent animal. The act of blood sacrifice would show their faith and belief in God's promise of restoration and salvation. It also showed an admission of their own sinful nature and an acknowledgment of the fact that they deserved to die but God had allowed an innocent life to shoulder their guilt and take on the sentence of death in their behalf. No works of their own hands, no words, no payment, no penance or good deed could make atonement for their sin. This impossibility of being able to save oneself by good works or righteous merit was at the heart of true religion then and has remained so ever since. Without believing in a coming Savior, one who would shed His blood for the forgiveness of sin, a Savior who would come through the seed of the woman, man's search for God and his return to Him (his religion) would be vain. This truth became painfully obvious in a showdown between true and false religion when Cain and Abel brought offerings to God. They both knew to bring offerings and to present them to the Lord. They both understood the meaning of this religious act and that it was needed in order to have communion with God. But one man did the right thing, the other invented his own religion. God accepted Abel's offering of the firstlings of his flock. God rejected the older brother's offering of the fruit of the ground. Abel had been true by acknowledging the only covering for sin, the shed blood of an innocent life in place of his own blood. But God had cursed the ground for man's sake and now Cain was offering the works of his own hands from a cursed earth to God. A

characteristic of the whore was born in Cain when he took elements of the truth and put his own spin on it. It was an open show of rebellion and human pride. Cain's offering spoke of his own prowess and goodness and self-righteousness. It was a "strange" offering. It perverted God's original and righteous instructions. Cain was sacrificing to God, but it was not the divinely prescribed sacrifice. Abel's offering, on the other hand, was humble, obedient and according to truth.

Again, just as in the Garden, false religion seemed to win out over the true way. Cain rose up in the field and slew his younger brother. But God again saved the situation when he gave Adam and Eve another son, Seth, one who could succeed the righteous Abel.

*"And Adam knew his wife again; and she bare a son, and called his name Seth: For God, said she, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew.*

*And to Seth, to him also there was born a son; and he called his name Enos: then began men to call upon the name of the LORD." Gen 4:25-26*

Seth would become God's priest and an ambassador of the true religion, but more about that in future chapters. First, if we are to truthfully chart the growth and evolution of this harlot called Mystery Babylon we must talk of the great world-wide conspiracy of false religion that Satan hatched during the 1,600 years of man's existence before the Flood.

### **Satan's Grand Antediluvian Strategy**

After the murder of Abel, Satan devised a plan to provoke God

into destroying all of mankind. It almost succeeded. By the time of the Flood, false religion had so permeated every part of the human race that all of humanity was corrupted. Genesis 6:1-2 reveals Satan's fantastic, but effective, strategy.

*“And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them.*

*That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.” Gen 6:1-2*

### **Demons Took On Human Form**

God had given the command to, *“be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it”* Gen 1:28 Families and villages began to overspread the earth. Agrarian communities under patriarchal leadership and guidance sprang up in southeast Europe, throughout the Near East and south into the northern part of the continent of Africa. But Satan figured out a way to disrupt the migration of mankind and corrupt both its body and soul. Certain legions of fallen angels, who the Jewish priests and fabulist have called The Watchers , somehow left their first estate in the heavenlies, took on the likeness of human flesh and began to have children with the women of earth. Jude refers to them in this passage of scripture:

*“And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.” Jude 1:6*

There had been two major confrontations between true and false religion. Satan had gotten Adam and Eve to sin and he had

provoked Cain into murdering the righteous, obedient Abel. The Devil had reason to believe that both schemes had been at least partly, if not entirely, successful. But to Satan's disappointment neither scheme had stopped God's plan of salvation. As men began to multiply on the earth Satan needed a grander, more desperate strategy. He now launched a full-scale assault on the truth using his demonic angels to corrupt "*the seed of the woman*". The sinister plot was designed to ravage the world in such a total way that God would have no choice but to abort His whole relationship with Mankind. You will recall that God's first promise to man was given to Adam and Eve when He promised to send them a "*champion*" who would deliver them and their children to come from the effects of their fall from grace. Having failed in his first two attempts, Satan decided competition and corruption to be the better course of action. As his angels cohabited with women they began to sire Satanic "*champions*" to compete with this fundamental prophecy of salvation. Satan hoped for two things in his new strategy. He hoped to derail the true religion by getting mankind to worship the progeny of these unholy unions; and he planned to so thoroughly infect the bloodlines of the human race that no pure descendent of Adam would remain from which the Messiah could be born into this world.

If no pure channel of uncorrupted human flesh could be found then the Messiah could not come. At first glance this conspiracy to corrupt man may seem far-fetched. But when the history of false religion is taken into account it becomes the most plausible

explanation for Satan's motives. Genesis 6:4 makes this very interesting and revealing remark and can give the Biblical historian a whole new perspective on the world and the fact that mystery religions, obtuse and perverse in their forms of worship, existed in powerfully developed ways in the 1,600 years before the Flood. We are told this:

*“There were giants (bullies) in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.” Gen 6:4*

### **Superhuman Giants, (Bullies) Like Hercules Did Walk The Earth**

What this means is that these “sons of God,” or Nephilim as the Jews called them, were fallen angels who came to earth and begat superhuman beings. The word actually means giant bullies, or tyrants. Though the history of these beings was washed away with the Flood we have been left with a vast record of what these extraordinary beings must have been like.

### **Historians reveal Roots of Mythology in Antediluvian Period**

The Jewish historian, Josephus, makes this remark about these giants in his Antiquities: *“For seven generations, men continued to believe in God as the Master of the universe, but then they fell into vice and depravity. Some, born of angels who had consorted with women, resembled the audacious giants of Greek mythology”.*

The mythological religions and histories of nearly every civilization are more than fairy tales told to inspire men to



greater heights of courage and national pride. The legends grew and were embellished by classical poets like Hesiod, Homer, Ovid, Horace and Virgil; were glorified in the Greek tragedies and plays; and fictionalized in much of the Jewish tradition recorded by the Pharisees, rabbis and Levitical priesthood in fabulously fictional books such as, Adam and Eve, Enoch and Jubilees. The Scriptural truth is confirmed by our classic past and archaeological finds in the Middle East and Mediterranean countries. That these “giants”, who were both man and angel, existed should not be denied by any Bible believing Christian. We know they existed in the Antediluvian world because Genesis tells us so. The traditions that grew up were surely based on actual accounts and facts – though admittedly greatly exaggerated in many cases – and these super human mortals were endowed with the strength and power of the angels who were their crafty and lustful fathers.

The book of Jubilees and The Book of Enoch were written in the second century B.C. by Jewish priests trying to build a case for the eternal establishment of the Mosaic Law. Though they wrote these tales from the most thinly veiled ulterior motives, they indicate the Jewish acceptance of the truth of the Nephilim. Fantastic stories abound in every culture about these progeny of heavenly beings. Among the Arabs they are genii and the Greeks painted them as Cyclops, for example. Jewish tradition says that some of these giants stood as tall as 300 feet and that after they had ravaged the stores of man and eaten the best of his crops and herds that they turned on each other, and as cannibals, seized

control of tribes of men and led them in wars against neighboring tribes which were controlled by a rival Nephilim. The Scriptures merely say that violence filled the earth, it is reasonable to assume that this violence was led by the “*champions*” who were endowed with heavenly powers and great size. As late as second century (150 A.D.) pagan worshipers from Italy and other parts of the Roman Empire were making pilgrimage to a site north of the Adriatic Sea in the Balkans to see the skeletal remains of a giant reported to be 22 ells or 80 feet tall. Though this may be nonsense, or the size exaggerated, the pilgrimages and its site is documented and undisputed, showing that the world, even as late as 150 A.D., believed the truth of the legacy of giants.

To support the point one only need refer to the Bible and the giants who were present in the land of Canaan after the Flood. Notice that the verse from Gen. 6:4 says that giants walked the earth in those days before the Flood, “*and after that.*” Scriptures only make a brief mention of Nephilim in the days before the Flood but these mutated beings do play a prominent role later on in the Old Testament when Israel took possession of the Promised Land. The giants, Goliath and his brother, were the sons of new Nephilim who apparently had tried to resurrect the conspiracy of polluting the human seed, or had just succumbed to their lust for earthly women, after the Flood. Goliath represented the last vestiges of this “*race*” of abhorrent half-man, half-angel creatures, or as the Bible puts it, The renown men of old. The recurrence of the “*Nephilim*” conspiracy in Canaan is perhaps one primary reason why God demanded that the

Israelites totally destroy the Canaanites who lived in the Promised Land. The seed of the Canaanites had been corrupted again by fallen angels. After the Flood, God confined this renewed conspiracy to the area of Canaan, but before the Flood these giants had appeared wherever the seeds of civilization had been sown. This explains the legends, fables and myths, and the otherwise bizarre religion surrounding mythological gods, that were so much a part of all of the peoples and ancient civilizations of Babylon, Egypt, Persia, Greece, Rome, India, Japan, China and every minor tribe and culture in the most remote lands of the earth.

### **Nephilim Were Worshipped By Men**

There is more than a kernel of truth that these Herculean beings were half-man, half-god. They were supernatural mortals of flesh and blood, with great and extraordinary knowledge and power. They had the supernatural strength and wisdom of the ages given them by contact with their demonic fathers. Genesis' statement that "*these were the men of old, men of renown*" oozes with a world of implications. The legends of mythology are not concoctions of unsophisticated barbarians, but are of genuine historical fact having very real basis in truth. This was understood and acknowledged, and undisputed by men everywhere until the fourth century B.C. when the original rational movement among the so-called Greek skeptics and cynics gave rise to philosophers like Socrates and Aristotle which in turn caused the rejection of all former history as handed down from Noah and his sons. As the teachings of the Age of Reason

(so-called) and the false science of Darwinism and Evolution has tried to undermine the literal truth of Biblical history and the truth about Creation as told in Genesis, so the rational movement among the Greeks was used by Satan to obscure the truth of man's origins and the truth about the Greek gods having their origins in the conspiracy of the angels to defile the bloodlines of mankind. But prior to the Greek philosophers and sophists, respected historians like Hesiod and Homer took for granted the historical reality of these men of old, the "*men of renown.*" Homer accepted without question that men like Achilles, for example, were the offspring of a god and an earthly woman who had been seduced.

### **Worship of the Demigods: Beginning of Mystery Babylon**

These renown sons of "*gods*" grew to manhood in a time when men, if they were not cut down by war, a wild animal or murdered, lived five hundred, six hundred and even as much as nine hundred years. During that time we must believe that the strongest of these mortal Nephilim (bully "*gods*") created dynasties and kingdoms of their own and were in direct competition with other such realms. The patriarchal system of villages and tribes must have succumbed to the despotism of these mighty men and their submissive followers. Cities were built, like the city in the land of Nod where Cain found sanctuary after his murder of Abel. Armies likely were raised, and wars and conflict became commonplace. The Bible tells us one of the main reasons for God bringing on the Flood was that, "*the earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence.*"

Gen. 6:11 God had intended man to live quietly, in family and tribal groups while seeking Him and calling upon His name, but the advent of the Nephilim caused perhaps the most profound societal change that man will ever experience outside of Christ's Second Coming. The son of a particular fallen angel would become the lord over a province or region and become, as Goliath was to the Philistines, a champion to a people. Competition, jealousy and war became fierce and commonplace.

Is it hard to understand that eventually these heroes, along with their father and mother, were idolized and became that people's deity. They were the sons of gods and they were worshiped as gods themselves. This is the true origin of all polytheism on earth. Hinduism, Buddhism, the ancestor worship of the Shinto in Japan, the mythology of the Scandinavians, wherever multiple gods are worshiped, they have their origin in the Age of the Nephilim. The worship of many gods found its reality with the progeny of the fallen angels who took women as their wives. Their spouses and their sons were worshiped as mythical and legendary hero's and heroines.

The twelve tasks of Hercules and his defiance of the "gods" is a perfect example of the legends that were built during the millennium of the Nephilim's tyrannical rule of the earth. The world most likely became intoxicated with these men of "renown," marveling at their incredible feats. The phrase about the men of old and the men of renown from the Scriptures surely implies that these super humans did mighty exploits just as mythology claims. It is not hard to believe that mankind started to worship

these mighty champions as “gods” in their own right. It is equally easy to believe that their mothers were also revered and worshipped. Mother and child worship was a natural spin-off of this conspiracy to corrupt true religion and seduce man away from worshiping God in spirit and in truth. Naturally, the fallen angels, who Jude tells us were imprisoned for their unlawful transition into flesh, were also made into icons of faith. They were venerated as the departed “gods” who supposedly ruled from afar (but actually had been imprisoned for their outrageous transformation into flesh), on some heavenly perch symbolized by a place like Mount Olympus.

### **Mythology’s Stories Tell A Tale of Demonic Rebellion**

The petty jealousies and intrigues among the gods in the stories of Scandinavian, Teutonic, Greek and Roman mythology were actually demons who were vying for man’s worship and earthly power through their offspring. This polytheism, pantheism, or worship of many “gods,” was one of the greatest factors in God’s decision to flood the earth and kill all its inhabitants. A religion of rebellion had been spawned by this conspiracy. Man and rebellious angel, with Satan at its head, and man in second command was created in the 1,600 odd years before the Flood. Understanding that these superhuman beings actually existed, not just in the imaginations of men, but in all reality, sheds new light on the spiritual and religious teachings of mythology. For example, when we find in Germanic/Scandinavian lore that the subservient gods led by Odin kill their creator and make a new earth, we see the fallen angels and their progeny telling mankind

that God has been defeated and that they are fashioning a new world. This tale is told again in Greek mythology when Cronus, the father of the gods, is exiled by his son Zeus, who together with a cast of other “gods” takes over the earth and sets up rule on Mt. Olympus.

### **New World Quickly Corrupted by Nimrod’s Use of Mystery Babylon**

When Noah and his three sons stepped off the ark onto dry ground, a pristine world full of wonderful possibility lay gloriously before them. Only one righteous man and his family remained in this wonderful possession that God had given to Adam and his seed 1,600 years before. The old corruption and evil had been washed away. As Noah looked at the first rainbow hanging in a blue sky above this bold new world he must have had great hope for the future.

The first thing Noah did after he strode down the gangplank was to build an altar and sacrifice an animal offering as a covenant of his desire to be obedient and righteous before God. The true religion of looking for redemption through the atonement of blood by a Messiah was immediately reestablished in this new world. At his side were his three sons: Japheth the elder, Shem, and Ham, the youngest. Shem was destined to be blessed, Ham would be cursed by God and Noah for his insolence and rebellion. (Gen. 9) Both of them would be used by their respective God to bring their religion over the gulf of the Flood and into the new world. Shem was to bring the religion of his father, and Ham would bring the false religion of Nephilim

worship with him. Polytheism, the essence of Mystery Babylon's false religion, had already been firmly established. The Whore would never give this up. Whether it came in the form of the many gods of Hinduism, or the many prophets of the Muslims, or the saint worship of apostate Christianity, "mystery" religion would keep the worship of many gods alive and prospering in many different forms. Eventually, the heart and soul of the idolatry of polytheism found its identity in the worship of the god and goddess of fertility. This probably came from the early respect that was given to those who procreated and multiplied man on the earth. Having children was vitally important during the first millennium of creation and greatly desired. These demigods brought forth children and the women who became known for having many children were venerated and made into goddesses. Ashtoreth and all the variations on the name (including Astarte, Ishtar, Aphrodite, and Venus which are the same goddess in Philistine, Babylonian, Egyptian, Greek and Roman mythology) became the primary goddess of fertility after the Flood. Satan took the command of God, "*Be fruitful and multiply*" and made a god out of fertility itself. As usual the Devil took a truth and perverted it by twisting it to serve false religion's purposes. Madonna worship and the Easter Bunny are just two examples of the lingering corruption that was begun in the evil Antediluvian world when grotesque bullies filled the earth with violence. The man who would begin the new system of polytheism after the Flood was a descendant of Ham named Nimrod and it was this mighty one who would redefine the



worship of the Age of the Nephilim and shape it for the new world.

### 3. Gateway To Believing In the World & The Antichrist Kingdom

#### The Seductress:

*“A foolish woman is clamorous: she is simple, and knows nothing. For she sits at the door of her house, on a seat in the high places of the city, To call passengers who go right on their ways: Whoso is simple, let him turn in hither: and as for him that wanteth understanding, she saith to him, Stolen waters are sweet, and bread eaten in secret is pleasant. But he knows not that the dead are there; and that her guests are in the depths of hell.” Prov 9:13-18*

Within the EOE's battery of articles on Mystery Babylon we explore the historical roots of the 'Anti-Bride' and in a subsection entitled "The Wine of Her Fornication" (a reference to the remark in the Book of Revelation that she has made the inhabitants of the earth drunk on her vile doctrines and lies) we devote a group of related articles to its heretical doctrines which have been carefully woven into the fabric of world religions, into Israel and into the churches through unguarded acceptance of her sinister witchcraft and sorceries. Her rise in history coincides with Nimrod and the conspiracy at the Tower of Babel.

In Revelation believers and followers of God are warned to repent of any and all sorcery which the seductress has promoted

by her false doctrines down the ages. The advent of this 'Jezebel' came in the person of Semiramis who was wife to Nimrod and mother of their 'savior' son, Tammuz. Wherever or whenever we have been taken in by this false trinity of salvation or involved in adhering to their subtle deceptions we are to righteously disavow and wholeheartedly reject them. The spirit of the Bride will do so; because she has the righteous 'fear of the Lord' and the fear of the Lord, we are told in Proverbs, is to hate evil.

False religion, Mystery Babylon, The Anti-Bride, The Great Whore – every name is fitting, call her what you will. Dub the spirit of infidelity and whorish idolatry, she, call it a religion, an "it" if you wish – whatever label one uses this ancient conspirator/spirit remains to this day the gateway for mankind's entrance into the religion of the world. It is the universal religion found in various form and theological hybrid around the globe and on every continent. She is the conduit by which mankind most easily falls in league with the Antichrist and his earthly dominion. She is that Mystery Babylon which is in opposition to the true religion of God. She is the goddess of man-styled religion, the word derived from two latin words, reo and legare – to bind again – she is the one through fornication and idolatry which is able to bind man to slavery and death by her toxic brews and bogus beliefs.

This spirit of religion is committed to a personal alliance with the Antichrist. He is able to use her like a puppet master, though she deludes herself into thinking she can use him. Over the course of history she has sometimes risen up against her master

in attempted coupes to control the destiny of mankind and gain its worship for herself. Each time she has attempted a takeover, as with the medieval papacy for example, she has failed and the spirit of Antichrist has gained back control using her for its diabolical purposes, ensnaring mankind in its web of rebellion and blasphemy against the God of creation. In compliance and collusion with the Antichrist's ill-conceived and ultimately doomed rebellion against God and all that is in heaven, the Whorish religion has had a fabulous reign over the hearts of men. That reign, however, is about to end, not until, however, it helps the Antichrist to lead the whole earth into rebellion for one more fantastic and desperate attempt to try and steal Man's love away from God.

The Antichrist conspiracy, with its false religion is the sworn enemy of God. Satan, Antichrist and the Whore (finally personified by the False Prophet of Revelation) comprise the trio, an unholy trinity of desperados who are destined to lead the world and its duped followers to Armageddon and the final ill-fated war against God and the everlasting kingdom of Jesus Christ, Savior, Lamb of God and eternal King of kings.

We now embark on the examination of a vast and complex conspiracy of Antichrist elements which have had a long running effect upon the history and life of the Church of Jesus Christ. The Antichrist is the enemy seeking to do its 'father's works' of robbing, destroying and killing all faith in God. The Whore, Mystery Babylon has often conducted its dirty business from within the congregation of God's people, an idolatrous presence

with a powerful spiritual delusion of sorcery and witchcraft which has dragged down many an unsuspecting and callous would-be believer of truth. The 'Great Whore' has proven to be a most dangerous enemy to the churches with influence equal to or near to that of the Antichrist or Satan himself. This spirit of idolatry is a formidable menace to salvation and even today is a true nemesis of the spirit of brideship and all spirit of fidelity toward Christ and God. This enemy is the gatekeeper of idolatry. Every Christian should seek to identify her and know what it takes to ward off her unsavory advances. That is the prime purpose of this section of our website. She brings unsuspecting Christians into a false way which not only impedes their perfection and worthiness before God but is also designed to undo their health, sap them of the general health given to the believer by overall salvation, primarily by entangling them in the affairs of this life and distracting them from the spiritual life in Christ.

As the woman closely associated with the Antichrist she amounts to The Anti-bride, seducing as many as she can into the waiting arms of her most cruel abusive lover who really hates them and intends to lure them to their death. The unknowing soul will pin all hope and affection upon the transient things of this unworthy love affair driving them through encouraging lust into chasing the temporary riches of this fading world. As the Anti-bride the Whore is the gatekeeper into the world of the Antichrist. He uses her to promote an illicit affair and relationship with him. He is that abominable one, the 'son of perdition', who is

the devoted servant of the Devil, the 'prince' of this world. The Whore is the subject of chapters seventeen and eighteen of Revelation. Understanding her persona, spirit, mission and power is extremely important for the true believer because its spirit can infect the spirit of Brideship to the point of causing sickness and even death if it is not properly avoided, if the Whore's advances are not entirely checked and refuted. So important is the knowledge of her existence and sorceries that God has devoted two whole chapters in the final book of the Bible to her. It only makes sense that we give it full attention. We need to take God's words about her very seriously and not shy away from any truth, no matter how hard-hitting or offensive it may seem to our manners and Christian sensitivity. We try here to warn both believer and sceptic about her. We offer this as an expose', hoping that it may not only be effective in making the aspiring Bride wise to the ways and operations of the Anti-Bride, but also by careful comparison those who seek righteous standing with God may gain insight into the good conduct and faith that befits the true Bride of Christ.

## 4. The False Religion of Jezebel: Then and Now

### The Spirit of False Religion in the Church (90AD).

*Jezebel*. No other name can evoke such images of wickedness and evil manipulations than the name “Jezebel”. It is synonymous with despicable, reprehensible and contemptible, just to name a few. Her name has echoed through 3,000 years of history as a byword for anything that is vile, polluted and idolatrous. So why do we want to know anything about her?

That we may Beware!

From accounts in the Old Testament we find that Jezebel was the wife of King Ahab of Israel (874-853 B.C) of whom God said, *“and Ahab did more to provoke the LORD God of Israel to anger than all the kings of Israel that were before him”* 1 Kings 16:33 A Baal worshipper, she was an evil, evil woman who ordered the prophets of the Lord to be slain. She enticed her husband to commit idolatry against his God by forcing him and his people to worship Baal also. Baal worship and the worship of false gods, in general, was prevalent at various times in Hebrew history under certain weak or evil kings. Unger’s Bible Dictionary describes Baal worship this way: *“The inhabitants of Canaan were addicted to Baal worship... The gaiety and licentious character of Baal worship always had a subtle attraction for the austere Hebrews bound to serve a holy God under a rigorous moral code.”*

Elijah proved Baal to be a false god when he challenged his false prophets to a test of faith on Mt. Carmel. When Baal failed to send down fire from heaven to consume a sacrifice, Elijah's Lord lived up to the challenge and readily consumed the sacrifice that Elijah had prepared. Infuriated, Jezebel ordered the death of Elijah.

In another instance of treachery, Jezebel plotted against a man named Naboth who owned a vineyard next to King Ahab's palace. Ahab, for some reason, decided he wanted the vineyard and offered Naboth money or another vineyard for it. When Naboth refused to give it to him citing that the Lord forbade it because it was an inheritance, Jezebel conspired against him. By forging the king's name she sent letters to the elders of the city to have Naboth brought before them for blaspheming God and the king. He was subsequently stoned to death.

When news of this wicked offense reached Elijah, the Lord moved him to prophesy of both Ahab's and Jezebel's demise. *"Thus saith the Lord, in the place where dogs licked the blood of Naboth shall dogs lick thy blood, even thine... And of Jezebel also spake the Lord, saying, the dogs shall eat Jezebel by the wall of Jezreel."* Just as Elijah had foretold, Ahab was killed in battle with dogs licking up his blood which had spilled on his chariot. As we see from the account in II Kings, Jezebel's demise was even more gruesome.

*"And he said, throw her down. So they threw her down: and some of her blood was sprinkled on the wall, and on the horses: and he trode her under foot.*



*And when he was come in, he did eat and drink, and said, Go, see now this cursed woman, and bury her: for she is a king's daughter.*

*And they went to bury her: but they found no more of her than the skull, and the feet, and the palms of her hands.” 2 Kings 9:33-35*

Jezebel is mentioned only once in the New Testament. It is in Revelation chapter 2 where Jesus commands the apostle John to write to the church at Thyatira concerning her: *“Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.” Rev.2:20-23*

Jezebel, in the New Testament, represents the marriage of false doctrine with true Christian doctrine, as exemplified in the Roman church. The church at Thyatira, which represents under the papal church established around 450 A.D. at the fall of the Roman Empire, was commended by the Lord for their many, many works and charitable service. However, He had a big bone to pick with them in the person of Jezebel, as we see in Revelation 2:20. She is given a chance to repent but refuses. Rev

2:21 Likewise, the Thyatirans are advised to repent or be thrown into great tribulation with her.

Though current Evangelical teaching is trying to sweep this knowledge under the rug it was not very long ago that every Bible-believing Christian understood about the whore of Babylon and the Jezebel spirit. The spirit of idolatry in the Christian church was given birth by the spirit of Jezebel (the Papacy) during this era of church history and has continued to flourish to this day. It has laid the groundwork for the disdainful ways of the Laodicean lukewarm commitment to truth and the arrogance of spiritual pride. The many false practices and idolatries of the Roman system are too numerous to go into detail here, but to name a few: statue worship (graven images), Mary and “saint” worship, salvation by infant water baptism, and transubstantiation (the mystery of turning bread and wine into the so-called “actual” body and blood of Christ – a feeble attempt to make oneself holy) and purgatory, lead many away by modernizing and ‘Christianizing’ the fabulously false mysteries of Babylon’s anti-christ religion. The spirit of Jezebel is a prime mover in this false religion that rooted itself in Christianity over the course of this age, starting with the believers at Thyatira in the first century C.E. The advances the Church at large made against these polluted teachings of the Dark Ages were hard won. Countless men and women gave up their lives resisting the whore’s persecutions. The depths of Satan were felt in that dark period of church history with the atrocities of the inquisition and the martyrdom of faithful servants of Christ who refused to deny

his name. It is sad, indeed, to see so many Christians' cash in these doctrinal victories won by the blood of the saints for a false peace and ecumenism that will come to naught in the end.

So then, why does "Jezebel" have so many devotees? How can so many people be wrong? An answer may be found in the story of Noah and his family, who were eight people out of the whole world who were found righteous before God and obeyed His voice. That is why we must take seriously the voice of God speaking through Paul when He says:

*"And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.*

*Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you."* 2 Cor. 6:16-17

God would not have chronicled Jezebel's demise so graphically had he not meant to make a specific point. Does not God want us to slay the wicked woman with fervor whenever she tries to perpetrate her sorceries? Let us beware of her seductress idolatries and strive to come out from among them and be separate. Heed the warning of the woman Jezebel!

*"I will give unto every one of you according to your works."*

**END NOTE:**

Gordon Lindsey wrote in the 1960's in his Revelation Series: "The Seven Churches of Revelation", has this to say about her:

*“Jezebel is the Papal Church which arose during the Dark Ages. While the name doubtless referred to someone in the local church of Thyatira, prophetically it symbolizes the rise of the Papacy of which Jezebel is a type. This is the accepted interpretation of all evangelical interpreters, and there can be no doubt but that it is the true interpretation. The aptness of the symbology is obvious and striking...The horrors of the inquisition, the burning of ‘heretics’ at the stake, immorality among the Popes, a decadent priesthood forbidden to marry, doctrines of the harlot Babylon, image worship in its grossest forms, Mariolatry – all these evil things appeared in the Church of Thyatira. It was a time of gross darkness.”*

## 5. Mother of Harlots & Great Whore

### The Enemy From Within

There is a spirit, The Great Whore, ancient and wise which is the powerful antithesis, the full and purpose driven counterpart of the historical ideal called in Bible prophecy The Bride of Christ. Just as the creation of the cumulative faithful person of the Bride of Christ has a glorious history revealed over four thousand years of Biblical history, so the Great Whore has a history nearly as long, one which has been recorded also in the prophecies and historical accounts of the Bible.

Like cancer attacking the body from within, The Great Whore has lived a verified history as a malignant spirit, growing within the 'commonwealth of Israel' (i.e. The Jews and The Church) since its inception at the initial conspiracy where Antichrist spirits joined together with the whoredoms of false religion in an attempt to unseat God as rule over the Earth.

The Whore's official biblical designation is: '*Mystery, Babylon the Great, Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth*'. The EOE has pinpointed her initial appearance when she was conceived and hatched at the conspiracy known as the Tower of Babel under the first king of the earth, Nimrod with his wife and first lady of the occult, Semiramis. From that point the Holy Scriptures have duly recorded her major offensives attempting to

usurp God's throne of worship conducted through the course of time by this mysterious and sinister 'Mother of Harlots'. Unlike *The Bride of Christ* who has submitted herself to Him in faithful love and affection, the whore is the Antichrist's lover who never fails to prostitute herself in return for his inglorious favor. Just as the sun-clad woman in chapter 12 of Revelation is a portrait of the righteous and sober Bride of Christ, we shall find that the Great Whore, the "Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth" is a picture of infidelity and the adulteress fornication hidden in the heart of all false religions which amount in all its forms to be idolatry. The wine of her fornication has made the nations and the inhabitants of the earth drunken, believing her sometimes subtle lies and at other times her outrageous blasphemies and crafted misconceptions about God.

She is a cancer always attacking the body of Christ, infecting it with mutated cells devouring it from within. She has been Satan's agent since before the Flood itself and since the renewal of all things prior to and during the revival of mystery religion in the days of Nimrod and the conspiracy he led at the rebellion of the "Tower of Babel". She has always been the one to sow tares among the wheat. Though the conclusions we will inevitably draw are "politically incorrect" in today's world, the honest Bible student will have to agree they are unavoidable conclusions given the light of the only true standards of interpretation: the Holy Scriptures and the undeniable facts of history.

In chapter sixteen of Revelation God reveals the end of His judgment over the forces of evil and His final victory on earth.

The world had been prepared for Christ's takeover by three series of seven-fold judgments: the seals, the trumpets and the seven last plagues. Armageddon has taken place and the cities and mountains of the earth have been leveled by God's mighty hand. At the conclusion of the chapter we were told, "*and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.*" But we were not told any of the details about what this actually meant. The only other reference to this "Babylon" had come earlier in chapter fourteen of Revelation when an angel announced from heaven: "*Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.*" But again we were not given any specifics on who, what, or why, only that she has incurred God's great wrath and for that she will be destroyed. The reason for the lack of detail is because God could not cover so profound and far reaching a subject as false religion without giving it sufficient space and the scrutiny of His full attention. A subject so important in the destiny of Man was to be dealt with exclusively in clear, poignant terms.

The vision of the *Great Whore* is one of the most disturbing and unsettling of all Scripture. For true believers this vision serves as both a warning and a comfort. It is a shield against idolatry and a hedge to prevent us from accepting her lying, blasphemous practices which so often has been cleverly clothed in Christian garb. For those who have dedicated their lives to an unyielding love of the truth and God's exciting, holy Word, it is a consolation to know that this "whore" will be wiped out totally by the

judgment of God. Until we arrive at Revelation 17 we are privy to only three tidbits of information about this loathsome lady of the night. She has been in league with the monarchs and political powers of the earth. She has made the people of the earth drunk on her religion so that they would commit fornication with the powers of the world, so they would put their faith in worldly things rather than their Creator. She has provoked God's fierce and undiluted wrath. But what could be so serious as to make our long suffering God so irate as to want to annihilate her without mercy? When we are done surveying the depths of the vision about this woman of Satan we ought to come away with an abiding and clear view of the Church's true "enemy from within". In these final chapters Babylon is called not simply Babylon, but "Mystery Babylon" and The "Great Whore", a clear reference to her perverse and spiritually adulterous character. As chapter seventeen opens we are greeted by an angel who tells John that he will show him this great whore who has committed fornication with the kings of the earth and made the people of earth drunk with her perversity and whoredoms. Now begins the full exposure of this evil that has only been briefly mentioned in the passages of Revelation to this point.

This *Great Whore* has done two things that have especially provoked God's ire. She has committed fornication with the kings of the earth and has caused the earth's inhabitants to be drunk with the fruits of that illicit affair she has had with its leaders. In short, she has carried on an adulterous love affair with the world. All the while she presents herself as being married to God, his



dutiful and holy wife. This farce takes place in many ways, by nuns and spiritualists, through priests and imams, by monks and degenerate preachers. When God speaks of the Whore He is not talking about purely carnal infidelity, but a hideous spiritual adultery and perversity that has both invented its own religions and infiltrated the legitimate religions of Israel and churches of the Gentiles.

Fornication, in biblical terms, first means being unfaithful to a marriage commitment. God used this analogy when speaking of His relationship with Israel. His people are meant to be married to Him. They are His espoused wife, the Church is to be espoused to Christ. This woman has committed herself to Him and to Christ but has been unfaithful. She has taken all of the benefits of being God's wife, the prestige the wealth of health and the self-assurance of salvation and lived in the light, but has gone after her own lust for power and chased after other gods to feed her unbridled carnal lusts like a common whore. She was never content to be the submitted wife of God but committed the sin of her real husband's father, Satan. She is full of pride, ego, self-assurance and abominations of all sorts and lust, both spiritual and carnal.

She knows God's stance and that He is a jealous husband. He has said in His Word, "*Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.*" James 4:4 But she has had her own agenda. Not only has she had an affair with the world, but she has made it seem so glamorous and

beautiful, so full of life and hope, that the world's inhabitants have been intoxicated by it. She wants to be the ruler of the world; its queen. She concedes to the Antichrist being the King of the World only when she has to. The World will only adore and respect her as long as she currys its favor and plays by its rules, so she does so. She bows to the unrighteousness of worldliness and plays its political games. She takes and offers bribes and is easily manipulated for a price. The truth is for sale at all times and is not in the least her friend. She seeks to be a celebrity of the world and desires notoriety for her own honor's sake. She is impressed by the world's wealth and the power and beauty of flesh. She hopes to be the world's icon, its shining example. She only asks that what she says goes. She will give them anything they want as long as they pay her price. Every one of her delights are available for a price. "*But whoso committeth adultery with a woman lacketh understanding: he that doeth it destroyeth his own soul*", says Proverbs 6:32. By her sorceries and lies she has turned the peoples of the world, and unfortunately much of the Church of God, into a reeling drunkard fawning over what amounts to a sleazy hustler in a scarlet dress.

The cup she drinks from is full of abominations and filthiness. Her mystery rites have included all sorts of sexual perversions down through the ages, including homosexuality and prostitution. But her greatest filthiness has been in the spiritual lies she has invented about God and the Trinity. A blasphemous mother/child worship was conceived by Nimrod (called Bel by Assyria), the earth's first king, and his wife, Semiramis (also

known as Beltis by the Assyrians), right after the flood and has persisted down through the ages in The Whore's mystery rites. In many ways, *Mystery Babylon* has been the nemesis of God's people, even more so than the Antichrist spirit of the world. We shall find that Babylon is God's spiritual code word for the seduction and sorcery worked by Satan's religious system. Her religious "mysteries" have always been designed to draw true worship away from God, beginning with the days of Nimrod and the Tower of Babel. The condemnation given by God's Word in these next two chapters reach to the very heart of Satan's lies and his unquenchable desire to wrest the worship and obedience of the people of the earth away from the one true God in heaven. That system, the conspiracy to misdirect man away from God, with her accomplice, the Antichrist, has continued throughout history and will be very much an active part of religion on earth until the very end. John was beholding it in all its infamy when he saw this whore riding upon *The Beast*.

It is good to keep in mind that John is the acting representative of the Church throughout Revelation. John's first impulse was to wonder if he understood it correctly and we, too, should not be surprised if we find ourselves in a state of initial disbelief. So incredible, in fact, is this revelation that it was literally unimaginable to John. Verse six shows the prophets reaction:

The King James translates the end of this verse as, I wondered with great admiration, but could also be translated, "*I was greatly amazed*". An equivalent modern idiom would be: I could not believe my eyes. As we will discover John has just been given a

full view of this abominable creature and he is left in utter shock. It could be easily argued that John knew the true God and the one true religion better than anyone else who has ever lived. This is the same John who knew Jesus in the flesh. He walked and talked with Jesus. He beheld him in every hour of his earthly ministry. He saw him on the cross and for forty days following the resurrection he communed with Jesus. John was there when the Lord ascended into heaven. John was the man that lay on the bosom of Jesus at the Last Supper and asked who it was that would betray him. The Bible calls John the disciple whom Jesus loved. He must have also known a great deal about the false ways of Babylon, the battles that his fellow prophets had fought against the prophets of Baal and Jezebel, as well as the idolatries of the Jewish nation that had persisted over the centuries. He must have known about the evils and fallacies of Greek philosophy and humanism, and the polytheism of Roman mythology. All of these things had infiltrated and infested not just the world, but Judaism also. There is no way he was ignorant of the spreading of the plague of false religion over the whole earth. Yet, he was still astounded when he saw this vision and how big and powerful it is.

Nothing like this had ever before been seen or considered. We have to believe that this is the first time in history, in the very moment when John is given this vision, that the *Whore of Babylon* is exposed in all her infamy. Up until this time the *Great Whore* has been somewhat hidden, shrouded in mystery (thus her name MYSTERY) and the extent of her works only partially known by

God's people. Remember, God has only just given this revelation of things to come to Jesus Christ who in turn handed it to one of His angels to pass on to John. When we see the picture depicted in these chapters we must understand that we are looking at reality through God's eyes. It is a fresh revelation for believing Christians. It is a miracle of God's mercy that we can see it at all. It is only made possible because of Christ's death and resurrection from the grave. We must discard our earthly mentality and put on a mind-set that believes the Scriptures. What God sees is an unfaithful wife, a whorish adulterer, and much, much more. In God's view she is not only an adulterer and whore, she personifies everything that is evil about false religion, everything that has led people away from him to any other "god". She has betrayed Him for other "lovers". God is a jealous God, the first, second, third, ninth and tenth commandments, makes this very clear. Because of this, God will render to her the most severe judgment possible – total annihilation.

Because John himself was caught off guard and could not believe his eyes, we too should not be surprised if we are astounded and have a hard time believing this vision at first – intellectually speaking, that is. Once again, John serves the Church as an example. He stood in for the Church in chapter four as a symbol of the Rapture. He represented the Church in chapter ten when he took possession of the deed of the earth from Jesus. And again he acted in behalf of the Church in chapter eleven when he measured the temple for impending judgment. Now, once again, the faithful John stands a symbol of all faithful

believers who would seek to understand all that is written in the book of Revelation. Here, John represents the natural mind of the believer and how it will cry out in wonderment about the stated truth of the Scripture. How can this be so? How can a woman who appears to be so rich, who supposedly worships God, so powerful and influential, with many millions of devoted followers, be utterly abominable in God's eyes? How can she hold sway over the earth, carving out political deals with leaders of nations and yet causing her legions of devotees to dismiss the true worship of God? She has made them drunk on the fruits and unholy wine of service to the gods of this strange religion. How can there even be any such being with that kind of power and influence? And why have all believers in the world followed her so religiously?

If we are to believe Revelation we simply must believe the unbelievable. John has already seen the Rapture and believed it. He has seen the judgments of the world and the tribulation and death of saints and unswervingly believed them. Now he must believe this too. It would only be natural if at first he could not believe that the *Whore* had committed fornication with all the kings of the earth. In the vision he saw her drunk on the blood of his fellow prophets and the saints of Jesus Christ and he was appalled. He saw the name on her forehead which she proudly sports, 'Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth'. He must have asked himself, "who or what could be proud of such a title?" While his heart was saying, "it is true", his mind kept arguing, "how can this be?" His intellect could not readily accept such a broad and widespread evil by this lady of religion who

claimed to be “queen of heaven”. Though he surely knew of this ongoing blasphemy (Jeremiah 7 & 44) he still could not believe it was true to this extent. This is why God has exposed the Great Whore for what she truly is. It is nearly impossible for people to believe such a dreadful thing and that it would be tolerated by God. But, as the FBI notifies the nation about public enemy number one, so the Bible warns the Church of its “spiritual enemy number one”.

John had been taken into the wilderness, a place where he had formerly found the Sun-Clad women (Revelation chapter twelve) hiding from the face of *The Beast*, but now he sees another woman, drunk and riding upon the back of the Beast (Antichrist). What a total contrast. He must have recognized (as we do) that the beast she is riding is the Antichrist. It had the familiar seven heads and ten horns (from Daniel and previous visions of Revelation), and it had the blasphemies of the Antichrist written on it. It may have been hard for John to understand how deep the conspiracy between *The Beast* and *The Whore* has run throughout history. He had been given a full vision of the Antichrist and had even written of it in his first epistle to the churches (I John 2.18). But it is likely he had not been given the insight about false religion to this extent. He surely had a notion, or even a good idea, about the evils of the Babylonian tradition of religion and how it had infested the whole earth and the religions of the nations with a false form of worship and a fake trinity. When he saw that this woman, instead of being adorned with the clothing of holiness and light, like the woman in chapter twelve,

was decked out in worldly apparel, he may not have been totally surprised. Or, when he saw instead of a crown of stars, the terrible inscription, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH, tattooed on her forehead, he may have figured as much. But when he saw the mixture she drank to make herself drunk he became astounded and speechless.

The questions that must have been racing through John's mind were the same ones that all believers naturally ask: who exactly is this ghastly woman, what does she represent, and what is her relationship to *The Beast*? How can she be drinking the blood of saints and martyrs? But thank God for his ministering angel and for his faithfulness to show us these things as He has promised. Knowing John's bewilderment and amazement, and ours to come, the angel reassured John that he would let him know what this all meant. And, as we shall see, the angel interprets these matters for John in the verses that follow.

There should be no need to search out the identity of the symbolism of *The Dragon* or *The Beast* of chapters twelve and thirteen of revelation. We have been told directly by God's Word that the image of the Dragon is Satan and the image of the Beast is the Antichrist. But realizing the whore's identity is not so simple or easy, at least not until we get to Revelation 17 & 18. *The Whore*, then, has had to be spiritually discerned during the Church Age and must be today as well. She is, and always has been, an earthly institution from her beginnings, through the queen Jezebel's days in Israel, and her spirit's ongoing mission



thereafter. Her mission, remember is to deceive the world into believing any one of a brand of her false religion. Those who do not “buy her wares”, and kiss her feet, she will euphemistically kill and drink their blood. God chose not to give her identity away directly, lest her lethal persecutions go unrestrained and it lead to the perpetual destruction and death of true believers in every era of the Church Age or even the total annihilation of faithful believers.

Down through the centuries much has been written about the Great Whore. Debate always revolves around her identity. If we were to avoid identifying her it would save some argument and for this reason many commentators beg the issue. It would even save us being persecuted by her, which is inevitably going to happen to any of us who dare to state who she truly is. But there is no possible way to avoid this most critical question. In chapters seventeen and eighteen we shall find that God directs some very dreadful and bold condemnations at this woman and offers warnings to true believers concerning her. It is only logical to conclude that God would not go to such lengths to warn us about her strategies and tactics to corrupt the Church and delude the world with false religion if He did not want us to know who this enemy is. To make this woman a nameless, faceless entity nullifies God’s purposes. We must, therefore, give her a true identity if we are to understand God’s purposes about telling us of her character and deeds.

Though she is not exclusively the Roman Catholic branch of Christianity, the Catholic Church is the center of activity and

power in *The Whore* today and has been since A.D. 325 when Christianity became the official state religion of the Roman Empire, *The Beast*. We have already noted that her roots go back to early Babel, as far as Nimrod's Tower of Babel and the mystery religion begun there by him and his wife Semiramis. (In chapter sixteen we shall go into detail about Nimrod and that it was his conspiracy that conceived the false religion that has spawned all other false religions since then.) In days gone by men of renown in the Church have concluded this truth and as we delve into the two chapters we too shall see that there is really no other reasonable conclusion which can be drawn by either logic or spiritual understanding. Men like Joseph Seiss, Arthur Bloomfield, and Gordon Lindsay, upon whose teachings much of this study rests, long ago arrived at this inevitable, ugly, sometimes unpopular, and currently "politically incorrect" understanding and logical reasoning. Most modern Evangelical teachers of prophecy know this truth also, but are afraid to state it much less go into detail about it. It has more than just a tendency to stifle book sales.

The Roman Church, however, is only the mother of many harlots. Many of the other denominations, such as the Episcopal, Presbyterian, Lutheran and lesser ones have invented their own unscriptural and unholy liturgies and practices which have resulted in drift from the Gospel into a new kind of highly questionable religion that borders, and often is, nothing but idolatry of a pagan sort with its counterparts in Buddhism, Celtic

Magic, Eastern mysticism and Roman paganism and ancestor worship.

In the nineteenth century Protestant minister and teacher, Joseph Seiss aptly pinpointed the Roman Church as the fountainhead of the whorish corruptions that have crept into Christianity. (*The Apocalypse: Joseph Seiss*: Kregel Publications Grand Rapids, MI 1987 pp.385-404 chapters 38-39.) He sought to make it clear that the Roman Church is not alone as the harlot of the Church. We, too, agree with his assessment. The adultery of false religion goes much deeper and is spread much broader than just Roman Catholicism, or her Christian “offspring” for that matter.

Our study must take time at this point to delve more deeply into issues pertaining to the Church and true worship if we are to reap the benefits of God’s warnings about the sorceries and seductions of the idolatrous whore. Chapters seventeen and eighteen of Revelation are dealing primarily with the “enemy from within”. After World War II the United States suffered a period of paranoiac fear from the threat of Communism. The Communist strategy was to infiltrate and corrupt. The Communist threat became known as the Red Threat and party faithful were labeled “the enemy from within”. Communism was seen as the Antichrist by many Christians. That kind of fear and suspicion is not unique to the United States. Governments have always feared rebellion, sedition and coups from within their own ranks. Betrayal and intrigue has charted the course of European history for the last 1200 years. Infiltrating the enemy camp to

cause chaos, confusion and rebellion is a tactic as old as time itself. It is one of Satan's favorite strategies. He first sent some of his fallen angels to earth to cohabit with women in order to corrupt the seed of man. (Gen. 6) Later he used Balaam to show the Moabites how to cause Israel to fall into idolatry by seducing its men into marrying their pagan women. He also used Jezebel to seduce Israel into following the idolatrous practices of the priests of Baal. He infiltrated and corrupted Solomon's kingdom by having wives of foreign gods marry him and seduce him into idolatry. All of these were an "enemy from within" strategy that brought the people of God to idolatry, designed to dissolve their relationship with God. Satan knows that God must destroy idolatry and those who fall prey to its sensual lure. Should we be surprised or dismayed that Satan has tried even greater methods to tarnish and deceive the Church?

*The Scriptures say, "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works." 2 Corinthians 11:13-15* She has caused humanity to drink from the cup of her abominations and filthiness. The people of Israel acted this out when they worshipped the idols they made with their own hands and then in a drunken stupor rose up to play.

Our study must take time at this point to delve more deeply into issues pertaining to the Church and true worship if we are to

reap the benefits of God's warnings about the sorceries and seductions of the idolatrous whore. Chapters seventeen and eighteen of Revelation are dealing primarily with the "enemy from within". After World War II the United States suffered a period of paranoiac fear from the threat of Communism. The Communist strategy was to infiltrate and corrupt. The Communist threat became known as the Red Threat and party faithful were labeled "the enemy from within". Communism was seen as the Antichrist by many Christians. That kind of fear and suspicion is not unique to the United States. Governments have always feared rebellion, sedition and coups from within their own ranks. Betrayal and intrigue has charted the course of European history for the last 1200 years. Infiltrating the enemy camp to cause chaos, confusion and rebellion is a tactic as old as time itself. It is one of Satan's favorite strategies. He first sent some of his fallen angels to earth to cohabit with women in order to corrupt the seed of man. (Gen. 6) Later he used Balaam to show the Moabites how to cause Israel to fall into idolatry by seducing its men into marrying their pagan women. He also used Jezebel to seduce Israel into following the idolatrous practices of the priests of Baal. He infiltrated and corrupted Solomon's kingdom by having wives of foreign gods marry him and seduce him into idolatry. All of these were an "enemy from within" strategy that brought the people of God to idolatry, designed to dissolve their relationship with God. Satan knows that God must destroy idolatry and those who fall prey to its sensual lure. Should we be

surprised or dismayed that Satan has tried even greater methods to tarnish and deceive the Church?

The Scriptures say, *“For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.”* 2 Corinthians 11:13-15 She has caused humanity to drink from the cup of her abominations and filthiness. The people of Israel acted this out when they worshipped the idols they made with their own hands and then in a drunken stupor rose up to play.

We shall find that the great purpose of this revelation about *The Whore* is to deliver us out of idolatry. The very first of the commandments are:

1. *“Thou shalt have no other gods before me.”*
2. *“Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me”* Exodus 20:3-5

In verse four of chapter eighteen we hear a voice out of heaven interject a solemn warning about coming out of this Babylonian

whore so as not to receive the same judgment which she gets. The warning echoes the sentiments from an Epistle written by Paul which said,

*“And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? For ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.*

*Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.”* 2 Corinthians 6:16-18

In the letter to Thyatira we are again warned of the seductions of the great whore Jezebel, that harlot witch who led Israel astray. Jesus makes it clear that her spirit is rampant in the Church and that there is a severe judgment awaiting those who fall prey to it. And also, John ends his epistle not with “grace be to you” as most other epistles are so concluded, but with, *“little children keep yourselves from idols”* 1 John 5:21. Chapters seventeen and eighteen are the most controversial chapters of Revelation. Because they deal with religion they have caused many heated debates down through the centuries, but we shall not avoid any of the tough questions in spite of the resistance they may bring to us. In this study we have stood firmly on the ground that Revelation is simple and direct. God means what He says. The actions and promises of judgment and mercy in Revelation are to be taken literally by the Church, as well as the advice given to us by angels and Christ during the stirring

accounts of the coming redemption of the earth. The harlot is the double agent in the Church and is the mother of idolatry. She is the Catholic Church and her offspring, including all other false religions of the earth from Hinduism and Mohammedanism to Mormonism and the Jehovah Witnesses. We conclude this chapter on the “enemy from within” with this ancient Scriptural metaphoric warning against spiritual harlotry from Proverbs 7:4-27.

*“Say unto wisdom, Thou art my sister; and call understanding thy kinswoman:*

*That they may keep thee from the strange woman, from the stranger which flatters with her words.*

*For at the window of my house I looked through my casement, And beheld among the simple ones, I discerned among the youths, a young man void of understanding,*

*Passing through the street near her corner; and he went the way to her house, In the twilight, in the evening, in the black and dark night:*

*And, behold, there met him a woman with the attire of an harlot, and subtil of heart*

*(She is loud and stubborn; her feet abide not in her house: Now is she without, now in the streets, and lieth in wait at every corner.)*

*So she caught him, and kissed him, and with an impudent face said unto him, I have peace offerings with me; this day have I payed my vows.*

*Therefore came I forth to meet thee, diligently to seek thy face, and I have found thee.*



*I have decked my bed with coverings of tapestry, with carved works, with fine linen of Egypt.*

*I have perfumed my bed with myrrh, aloes, and cinnamon.*

*Come, let us take our fill of love until the morning: let us solace ourselves with loves. For the goodman is not at home, he is gone a long journey: He hath taken a bag of money with him, and will come home at the day appointed.*

*With her much fair speech she caused him to yield, with the flattering of her lips she forced him.*

*He goeth after her straightway, as an ox goeth to the slaughter, or as a fool to the correction of the stocks;*

*Till a dart strike through his liver; as a bird hasteth to the snare, and knoweth not that it is for his life.*

*Hearken unto me now therefore, O ye children, and attend to the words of my mouth.*

*Let not thine heart decline to her ways, go not astray in her paths. For she hath cast down many wounded: yea, many strong men have been slain by her. Her house is the way to hell, going down to the chambers of death.” Proverbs 7:4-27*

*The Apocalypse: Seiss Kregel Publications Grand Rapids, MI 1987 pp.385-404 chapters 38-39.*

## 6. Through The Fire

### The Seductress:

*“In the last days perilous times shall come ...”* That’s what the Scriptures tell us. Daniel chapter three and the story of the three Jewish men who refused to commit idolatry is an enduring witness to encourage all end-times saints. The above New Testament scripture goes on to say... *“for men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy ...”* 2 Tim. 3:2 There are rewards promised for those who stand firm in the pure Gospel of Jesus Christ and do not deny His name. In the letter to believers in Philadelphia, Christ promises this: *“I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.”* Rev. 3:8 The day is coming when these dark times will pass and the Daystar shall appear and we who have suffered for the Gospel will be completely vindicated. Daniel’s story of Meshach, Shadrach and Abednego is about the kind of faith required of today’s “Philadelphians” (Those of the pure Philadelphia Faith defined by the sixth letter to the churches in chapter three of the Book of Revelation.)

The world of politics and religion does not see it this way. To the Babylonian people, King Nebuchadnezzar’s decree that all men should worship the huge golden image which he had set up

in the plains just outside the magnificent capital city did not seem to be an unreasonable demand. A veritable grab-bag of gods was available as objects of worship for all subjects of the kingdom. There were gods of the sun and moon, gods of the birds and animals, gods for fertility and – well, gods for just about anything a man could think of, and then some. Worshipping an image that the king had designed should not be anything out of the ordinary or very difficult. The thing most uncommon about the whole affair was not even the image’s size and presence, but the general decree that anyone who did not fall down and worship it upon command would be summarily executed.

### **Experience of these three men parallel the End-Times experience**

In his wisdom Nebuchadnezzar started by singling out the leaders and governors of the empire and making them worship the image first. If the leaders bowed down to it then the king could be sure they would make their underlings do likewise. The king, the Bible says, had called the “*princes, governors, captains, judges, treasurers, counselors, sheriffs and all the rulers of the provinces, to come to the dedication of the image*” which he had set up. The government must show approval and support of all religious and political measures taken in any antichrist formation. In the end-times Satan’s strategy and the plan of the Antichrist is exactly the same. Convert the leaders and the people will be forced to follow. As Jesus said, “*Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees.*” Matt. 6:16/ Mark 8:15/ Luke 12:1

In other words, do not follow blindly the example and

teachings of your leaders. Make sure they are not corrupting your faith and leading you into idolatry, sin, or a false notion of who and what brings true salvation. For example, the image of gold set up in the vast plains, made accessible to all, was more than likely a facsimile all in gold (as the head which represented Babylon was gold) of the statue that Nebuchadnezzar had seen previously in his Providential dream. One thing is certain. Daniel's revelatory knowledge and interpretation was a sign for Nebuchadnezzar to begin worshipping God without reservation. It was impossible for him to miss the fact that Daniel's God was the all-mighty God. He had openly admitted this when he noted, your God is a "*God of gods and a Lord of kings*". Yet he missed the point entirely because he worshipped Daniel instead of God. It says in chapter 2:46, "*Then the king Nebuchadnezzar fell upon his face, and worshipped Daniel, and commanded that they should offer an oblation and sweet odours unto him.*" As if testifying to the belligerence and stubbornness of the antichrist spirit, Nebuchadnezzar became more adamant about idol worship than ever before. God had told him in a dream that his and subsequent empires were transient and sure to be destroyed in the end by the kingdom of the true God, but he persisted anyway. The idol was only an extension of self and all his accomplishments. His idolatry was, like all idolatries, centered around and about, self. He even extended his idolatry to further crimes when he determined to murder anyone who refused to concede to his demand, and again further compounded the insult by setting the whole national idolatry in motion to the tune of music, for it was

by the music of royal orchestras that persons throughout all the provinces of the empire were to prostrate themselves and worship toward the golden image. This all portends the Antichrist necessity for worship of the world. Worship or die, as with the Mark of the Beast and Image of the Beast.

### **Who Gets Burned Anyway?**

Satan moved Nebuchadnezzar to decree that those who did not worship the image of gold would be burned to death. But Christians know the opposite is in fact true. If you are an idolater you will suffer the second death which is to be thrown into the lake of fire where there is only eternal suffering and flames (Rev. 21:8). But if you are true to Jesus' name you will not burn or die, you will drink freely from the waters of eternal life. Satan's intent here was to drive home a spiritual lesson for an entire people. Commit idolatry and live. Refuse idolatry and die. God's Word to the end-times saint is still the same as it was back in Babylon 2,500 years ago. Worship God and Him only and you will live forever.

### **Don't Expect that Satan will be Fair**

There is nothing fair or honest about Satan. He is a bully, a liar, a deceiver, and a betrayer. He betrayed his Maker and his God. He will betray all creation. The three men he had condemned to such a terrible death were men who had been honored and promoted in the kingdom by Nebuchadnezzar. The king had given them power, riches and authority because he knew they were connected to the God of Daniel, the same God who had shown him the meaning of the troubling dream of world history. Satan

will try to jerk end-times saints around whenever possible. He will try to shower honors and flatteries on us and then make us look like fools or strip us of our dignity. End-times saints will not be treated fairly, just as these three men were rudely treated. Respect and accolades once bestowed, will be quickly forgotten as soon as we are forced to challenge the Devil's blasphemous lies. But, just as the three Jews prevailed, end time saints will also prevail by holding onto and not denying the name of Jesus.

### **We should not be tricked**

We should not be tricked into thinking that what or who we worship is just a matter of preference. God has declared He is a jealous God. Our worship is fundamentally important. Why else would God have made it one of the Ten Commandments, that we worship only Him? Why else would Satan have made such a big deal out of it by trying to get everybody to forsake God and worship an image? Satan wants to rip-off God by getting us to worship the creation rather than the Creator. Rom. 1 & 2 Only Jesus Christ is due our worship and no other; not Mary, not saints, not Mohammed, not Confucius, not our ancestors and not the works of our own hands. We should not allow ourselves to worship a Jesus of our own making, a pitfall of Christian theology and religiosity. We may form our own ideas about God, mold him into something we desire him to be and not the God he actually is. When this is done, even by the most pious of religions or reasonable evangelical doctrines it amounts to idolatry of ignorance, but idolatry none the less. We must guard ourselves and worship God for who and what He is – *The great I Am, that I*

Am. For God is who he is regardless of who or what we would like to think he is. God cannot deny himself. He is the same yesterday, today and forever. There is more to what is meant when the Book of 1 John closes, *“Little children keep yourselves from idols”* than not worshipping figurines or statues. Don't worship or ascribe powers of God to anything, regardless of what you call it, even if you call it Jesus or things of Christ, unless you want to suffer the judgment of idolaters. Serve only the true God. This is why it is imperative that we know Him, to know who He really is. We must worship the True Triune God – only.

### **Whether We Live or Die: We are the Lord's**

For their determination to keep themselves from idols the three heroes were condemned. They told the king that they would not try to fast talk their way out of it. To quote exactly, they said, *“we are not careful to answer thee on this matter.”* They went on, *“If it be so, our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and he will deliver us out of thine hand O king. But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up.”* End-times saints will know in their hour of testing that whether they live or die they are the Lord's and that their worship is due Him only.  
Romans 14:7-9

### **Symbolically They Were Fully Clothed**

The three men were finally dragged away and bound in their clothes to be thrown into the furnace. The three were *“bound in their coats, their hosen, and their hats and their other garments and were cast into the midst of the burning fiery furnace.”* They did

not suffer the humiliation of being naked. They were taken, fully bound in their garments. An odd thing to do to men you are about to roast. But the spiritual symbolism is apparent. We are given a picture book lesson to be aware of our spiritual garments. What have you clothed your spiritual countenance in, brothers and sisters? These men were clothed from head to foot. They had a hat (of salvation); leggings (to cover their legs and feet for the preparation of the gospel of peace); coats (of praise) and other garments (fine white linen which is the righteousness of the saints and the rest of the armor of God).

Anyone connected to the people of faith, who are without faith and not wearing the right garments, will perish in the fire just as those unfortunate men were incinerated who had thrown Meshach, Shadrach and Abednego into the fire. End-time saints will be manhandled by men who seem mighty, but because they don't have the right covering they will be the ones burned instead of the saint. Remember what actually happened, those who threw them into the fire were themselves burned instead of the saints. Saints may even have apparent friends around them who, because they do not have faith and protection, will desert them when they feel the heat. Don't despair though. If these people are not clothed properly, bound in the garments of Christ as the three Jews, they might perish if they stuck around. Through the faith and trial of these three men God was greatly glorified. They had been accused, ridiculed, condemned, betrayed and cast into a burning fire. But because of that Nebuchadnezzar saw Jesus. That's right. *"Then Nebuchadnezzar came near to the mouth of the*



*burning fiery furnace, and spake, and said, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, you servants of the most high God, come forth, and come hither. Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, came forth of the midst of the fire.” Dan. 3:26* Nebuchadnezzar approached but did not die because he was looking upon Jesus, the Son of God. Even though he saw Jesus, however, that does not mean he wised-up and decided to worship and reverence the Lord, The Most High, God only. We shall see in the next chapter the ongoing stubbornness of powerful men and the devastating judgment that fell on Nebuchadnezzar.

Because these saints had yielded their bodies for God’s use, as Romans 12 suggests as “*our reasonable service*”, God was glorified and a whole empire saw God’s love and power in action through a mysterious Savior. “*Then Nebuchadnezzar spake, and said, Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who hath sent his angel, and delivered his servants that trusted in him, and have changed the king’s word, and yielded their bodies, that they might not serve nor worship any god, except their own God.” Dan. 3:28* Their refusal to bow down in idolatry, their loyalty to God only, had changed the word of the king of this world and made it of no effect. If we will maintain our faith, the word of the world and that antichrist will have no power over us in the end. In the end the three heroes of faith were vindicated. Their insistence that worshipping God could not be compromised became evident for all to see. For the end-times saint this is the equivalent of the promise made to the Philadelphia Church in Revelation: “*Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews,*

*and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.” Rev.3:9*  
Remember how the Book of I John ends: *“Little children keep yourselves from idols.”* Keep your faith pure and your worship of God exclusive. You will be vindicated in the end. It is a promise.

## 7. The Great Whore Will Be Judged

### **Seated in Papacy Since 400 AD**

As we can now see, chapters seventeen and eighteen of Revelation provide God's people with a clear and astonishing spiritual picture of the most dangerous and notorious spiritual criminal of all time. This mortal enemy of both Israel and the Church is not embodied in a single living soul like Nimrod, Jezebel, Goliath, Herod the Great, or even Judas Iscariot, as one might suppose.

Even that gallery of spiritual rogues, heinous and notorious as they are in God's sight, are nothing more than singular expressions of The Great Whore. No, the tentacles of this adversary of Christ reach far beyond the exploits of a single person, or even a solitary movement, group or religion. She is the witch and seductress that has fomented rebellion and idolatry in a multitude of religious ways and by sordid soulish practices down through the ages. She is the combination of Man's wandering heart and the Devil's subtle lies. It is a spiritual force that the book of Revelation labeled – The Great Whore.

The Great Whore proudly wears the blasphemous title MYSTERY, BABYLON, MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. What a graphic picture of the “madam” of Satan's brothel – the spirit that has given birth and instruction to all the spiritual and religious harlots during the history of mankind. Therefore, we can say she is the mother of all

false religions. We have taken a rather somber, but honest, look at the Whore's activities in the Church, as an enemy from within, as she has sought to mingle paganism with the Gospel and thereby apostatize and dilute Christ's teachings, hoping to corrupt true believers wherever possible. The sum total of our investigation is that God's people have always had to fight against apostasy and seduction from The Whore and that she has always tried to destroy them by deceptions from within. We discovered her origins by looking at the book of Genesis and giving due regard to documented history. We unearthed her beginnings and growth and we discussed the stranglehold she has gained over the souls of men. Proving her existence and effect on the world has been a necessary prelude to understanding all that is said in the sprawling chapters of seventeen and eighteen. We must keep the last three chapters of our study in mind as we head into a full and orderly analysis of the two chapters which deal with this great menace.

### The Great Whore Indicted For Her Crimes

*“And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters:*

*With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.” Rev 17:1-2*

Just as under the law, there must be due cause for an indictment to be rendered, so God states the charges against The Whore before announcing her sentence and judgment. At the beginning of chapter 17 of Revelation, two specific accusations against The Great Whore are leveled. The first charge is that she has committed fornication with the kings of the earth. The strict Biblical definition of fornication is: the act of sexual relations between unmarried partners. In the spiritual realm fornication is always symbolic of idolatry which is spiritual adultery. It implies that this woman is married to one god, but is having illicit affairs with other deities. It is spiritual whoredom and, frankly, this is why God calls her a whore. This woman, this great whore, therefore, is “in bed” with the leaders and gods of this world. She has been in collusion with the leaders of the earth. She has lusted after political power and worldly gain.

The second charge against her is one that is most incredible and may have caused John’s initial reaction of disbelief. She stands accused of making the inhabitants of the earth drunk on her heresies, lies, deceptions and incredulous heresies. By means of her affairs and ties with this world she has seduced the world by the “wine of her fornication”. As for her infection of the Church with bogus doctrines of child baptism, lurid theologies of communion, an array of blasphemous doctrines of sacraments, pagan ideals of purgatory and heaven and setting up a system of ‘saints’ that are crafted after mythological glories with reckoned powers of Greek and Roman Gods, she has made the earth’s religions, including Christianity, drunk and, therefore, out of

touch with spiritual reality. The World has been blinded by The Whore.

It was declared in the Book of Romans chapter one, the World is void of knowledge about its Creator.

*“For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:*

*Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.*

*Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four footed beasts, and creeping things.*

*Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves:*

*Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.” Rom 1:20-25*

This has been the fruit and desire of her work throughout the ages. She has labored to make the inhabitants of the earth drunk on her lies, promises and deceptions. A drunk cannot see clearly, think clearly or walk without stumbling. A drunk is not in touch with reality; he is numb in body, soul and spirit. A drunk loves foolishness and strife. All this is true in the flesh, and even more

true with spiritual drunkenness, for it is in the spirit that she has made people drunk. She has used religion to keep them out of touch with God's reality, His Gospel of Truth. Her wine of religious deceit has caused believers to replace truth with lies. The world is like a falling down drunk. The world cannot see God clearly, cannot hear him, cannot stand in His presence, cannot be filled with the Spirit. Instead, the people of the world are drunken with the spirit of the world. They are intoxicated with the "wine" of idolatry and self-conceit. A favorite tactic of The Whore has been to build bogus religious traditions in the Church which have made "the word of God of none effect." Jesus exposed the Pharisees to this whorish practice.

The Whore has shown the people of the world how to make gods in their own image and how to fashion them after their own imaginations while making them look like they are worshiping the one true God. Man has learned that if the God they worship is the one of their own creation they can do whatever they want to do without fear of contradiction. They are drunk on the God-given right of freedom of choice and they choose to make their own god. Anyone who has ever dealt with a drunk or tried to get through to one knows how utterly useless it is to even try. The only thing one can do is wait for them to sober up and hope to talk some sense into them. The world has become addicted to The Whore's intoxicating "wine of fornication". She has shown them the way to "worship and serve the creature, more than the Creator. "

## The Evidence Against The Whore

*“So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.*

*And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.” Rev 17:3-5*

If it is true that we are known by the company we keep then we get a good idea of the character of The Great Whore by the nature of her accomplices. In the next three verses we discover that The Whore is riding on, of all things, The Antichrist. They are not in competition with one another as much as they are in collusion with one another. She rides upon its power and influence to make herself both influential and powerful. Down through history they have used one another. She can clearly see the Antichrist's blasphemous claims for they are written all over the scarlet colored beast. The Beast has the same seven heads and ten horns as the beast seen in Revelation thirteen and the book of Daniel. We know this must be the Antichrist. But we do not have to speculate on that for the angel will shortly tell John exactly what the beast, the seven heads, the ten horns and the waters on which they all sit, represent.



## **Contrast To The Sun-Clad Woman In Revelation Chapter Twelve**

Because The Whore sits astride The Beast we begin to understand that she is no victim. Her harlotry and fornication is no accident. She has not been seduced herself, she is the seductress. She is appareled in rich clothes and with gifts from all her unholy suitors. The cup of gold in her hand is a well-known and documented ancient symbol of idolatry harking back to the fertility goddesses of Nimrod's religion and the ancient religions of Egypt, Assyria, Greece and Rome. The Bible says that it is full of abominable things and all sorts of filthiness. This is the filthiness of her outrageous mystery rites, complete with the debauched practices of a lewd and unholy priesthood. This cup of abomination is filled with the worship of the work of men's hands and every silly misconception about God since the beginning of time. In this cup is every imaginable spiritual perversion: idolatry, pride, spiritual adultery, sorcery and blasphemy. The appearance, apparel and spirit of this woman is in marked contrast to another woman of which we became familiar in chapter twelve – the one clothed in the sun. They both are seen in the "wilderness" which is reflective of their spiritual character and place in religion. They are both in peril because they are in the "wilderness". One however, is protected by God and the other, The Great Whore is in jeopardy and will meet a damnable fate in the wilderness, betrayed by her treacherous allies. One is standing on the moon, the symbol of darkness, having won a victory over the forces of evil. The other rides on The Beast, the very personification of evil and rebellion against all that is righteous and godly. In nearly every way

the two women of Revelation are the exact opposite of each other. Gordon Lindsay in Vol. 13 of his series on Revelation details nine separate counts in which these two symbolic women differ as follows.

In all ways these two women contrast one another. The Sun-clothed Woman represents the true Church-Israel, while Mystery Babylon, Mother of Harlots is the progenitor of all that is false in the Church.

### **Prime Contrasts of Sun-Clad Woman and Mystery Babylon**

1. Both women have children. The first brought forth the Man-child who is to rule the nations. The second is the “*mother of harlots and abominations of the earth*”.
2. Both are dressed with attire that marks attention. One is clothed with the Sunlight of heaven. The other is decked in purple and scarlet and the gaudy jewels of the earth.
3. Both are in a position of influence and power. One has the moon under her feet and wears a crown of twelve stars. The other rides the Seven-headed Beast.
4. Both have great adversaries. One has the Dragon standing before her ready to devour her Man-child when it is born. The ten kings of the Beast turn against the Harlot and destroy her and “*burn her flesh with fire*”.
5. The first is a holy, virtuous woman. The other is a harlot and mother of harlots.

6. One is hated by the ruling powers of earth. The other is loved and courted by the world.
7. The one is sustained by the wings of an eagle. The other is supported and carried by the Beast Power.
8. The one gives birth to the Man-child who is to rule the nations with a rod of iron. The other is the oppressor of the righteous, and is drunken with the *“blood of the prophets and the saints, and of all that have been slain upon the earth.”*
9. One enters the New Jerusalem where she makes her home for eternity. The other comes under the wrath of God and goes down into the night of perdition. The two women may be said to be set as rivals in history and prophecy. Their interpretation in prophecy must have a corresponding relation. As the Sun-clothed woman is the true Church, the Church of all dispensation of both Old and New testament times, so this rival is as it were the Bride of the devil, embodying all that is devilish and sensual.

### **Her Title Reveals Her Works**

In chapter eighteen we are sternly warned by God to get away from The Whore or we, too, will partake of her judgment. The Great Whore's title offers us clues why we should refrain from any flirtation with her. MYSTERY: the first part of her name written on her forehead, refers to her roots both before and after the Flood when secret initiation rites were used to entice mankind into believing in false divinities and to worship the

creature rather than the Creator. The relationship with Mary is a fine example of this “mystery” among believers. Believers claim they do not worship Mary, but they go to her, pray to her, revere her, and trust in her for their every need. They exalt her above God in practice and yet “mysteriously” worship only God. They believe in the mystery of the Immaculate Conception and her miraculous Assumption into heaven, making her divine in every way, but they claim it is not worship – it is, however, a mystery. BABYLON: the second part of the name, has its beginnings in Nimrod’s Babylon, the ruler of the world, the framer of the collusion between Antichrist government and man-made religion. THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH:, the third part of her name, speaks of the many offspring that have come out of Nimrod’s Mystery Babylon system. Wherever religion has gone Mystery Babylon has moved in with her seduction and spirit of fornication to make the true believers (and potential true believers) confused and drunken by the lure of her fornicating ways. Whether it has been the mythological paganism of Scandinavia, India, Egypt, Greece or Rome; the polytheism of the Hindus; or Mariology in Christianity, she has been the fountainhead of abominations and the mother of these different harlots.

### **She Has Her Accomplices**

*“And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that*

*carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.” Rev 17:7*

The angel presenting the vision noticed that John was amazed and overwhelmed by what the picture of this extremely evil woman who represents the false Church meant. But the angel quickly reassured John and told him not to worry because he was about to show him exactly what all the symbols meant.

### **She Rides On the Eight Antichrist Kingdoms**

*“The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.*

*And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.*

*And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.*

*And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.” Rev 17:8-11*

The angel has given us a brief history of the Antichrist for a particular purpose. God wants to show us that The Whore has ridden on The Beast from her inception. This is a picture of the two at the very end when they are ripe for judgment, but it also tells us of their age-old relationship. The world will be in awe of

the Antichrist who will be dealt a mortal wound in the head (ch.13) yet is brought back to life. The Whore, which could be labeled as noted author Arthur Bloomfield does, The Anti Church, will be right at his side. It is probable that the False Prophet will somehow rise out of this ecumenical church that has embraced every form of idolatry from Hinduism to Spiritualism to all forms and denominations of so-called Christianity. This One World Church will be like the Laodicean Church, lukewarm and thinking itself rich and in need of nothing.

The angel then gives John a riddle saying that it will take a mind with wisdom to understand its meaning. We are told that the seven heads of The Beast represent seven kingdoms, or kings. The angel discloses that five are already come and gone, the sixth was presently in power, and the seventh is yet to be. But we are not told who those kingdoms are. For that understanding and wisdom we must employ our knowledge of the Scriptures. In the book of Daniel and in other places we have been told who these kingdoms are. The first kingdom is found in Genesis ten and eleven when we are told of Nimrod's kingdom which reached up and down the Tigris and Euphrates River valleys. The second is Egypt (its story is in Exodus), the kingdom that withstood Moses and first utilized the religious institutions of Mystery Babylon. The next four are revealed in Daniel and as we saw early in our study are: Babylon, Persia, Greece and Rome. The seventh is the kingdom of the ten kings also revealed in Daniel and confirmed in Revelation. We are told that this kingdom will last only a short time before it gives its power willingly to the Antichrist's final

powerful kingdom which is the eighth. As we have before proved, this seventh kingdom is a revived Roman Empire. The eighth kingdom is of the seventh because it is built on the foundation of the kingdom of the ten kings. It is a simple riddle if we know Scripture and Biblical prophecy.

### **The Antichrist and Ten Kings Make War With The Lamb**

*“And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.*

*These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.*

*These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.” Rev 17:12-14*

When the ten kings actually rise to power (probably a world-wide confederacy with Europe and the European Community being a forerunner of things to come) they will quickly give their power over to their champion, the Antichrist. If we have ever wondered why the world and the Antichrist would ever go to Armageddon and what they could possibly hope to accomplish there the question is answered beyond any doubt for us now. The world, the ten kings and the Antichrist come to Armageddon with one common bond: to “make war with the Lamb“. But God instantly reassures us that He will overcome them. Those that are

with Him at that time will be the ones that were not only called and chosen, but also faithful to be obedient to His voice. These will be the ones who heeded the message of prophecy and looked for the day of their deliverance. These are the ones who walked as pilgrims and sojourners. Some will have given their life that they might find it. Others will have appeared to be last even among the Church, but will be proven to be first in God's eyes. The ten kings and the Antichrist will hold absolute power over the souls of men, and The Great Whore will be the force that pulls them into their clutches. The called and chosen and faithful will be the ones who hold sway with God and the Lamb.

### The Waters are the Whole World

*“And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.” Rev 17:15*

If there remained any doubt as to how much turf The Great Whore covered there should be none now. She sits on the waters of the whole earth. This is a familiar expression in the Bible to denote the people of the entire earth. Revelation thirteen has already used the expression to show that the Antichrist has worldwide acceptance and appeal.

### The Political Powers of Antichrist Turn On Her



*“And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.*

*For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.” Rev 17:16,17*

For the first time, we get an indication of her judgment. Ironically it will be meted out by her so-called ally, the ten kings. There has always been a love-hate relationship between the forces of religion and secular powers. In the end, the truth will come out that the kings and the worldly powers have always resented The Whore’s constant meddling in their business and her attempts to impose her will on them. The Whore’s final demise will begin by her being betrayed by the Antichrist kingdom. They will take away her authority and all her property and instead of being rich, she will suddenly become naked and destitute. Her churches and retreat houses will be burned, her assets confiscated. Her priests and officials, and any others who object, will be executed. All pretense of following the Lamb or being Christian will be dropped. The False Prophet will announce a new religion with the Antichrist as God. The New Trinity will be The Dragon, The Beast and The False Prophet.

### **Identified Beyond a Shadow of Doubt**

*“And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.” Rev 17:18*

As if God is acting as a prosecuting attorney He has built his case against the defendant and then suddenly turns to the defendant and identifies her as the perpetrator of every crime and unlawful act listed in the charges. Without warning, we find out that the finger of God is pointing at a city. This city must embody the heart and soul of this spirit of adultery and idolatrous worship. What city can be identified with religion in these end times but Rome? – the leader of the whoredoms of the earth that is renown for its control of kings and nations. For centuries the Papacy in Rome ruled over the crowned heads of Europe. Dynasties were raised on the support of Popes. Kingdoms were divided by the decree of Rome. She controlled governments in South America and all over the new world. There is always a debate about whether this refers to Rome or Babylon itself. Now we will take a look at what God means by identifying the Great Whore as a city and we will closely analyze chapter eighteen in which the Fall of Babylon, with all its repercussions for the world and the faithful, is recorded by the vision given to John. We will take a look at the prevalent and popular teachings of prophecy and see how they stand up to the simple truth of God's holy word in Revelation.

### **Note**

A Historical foreshadowing of the Antichrist's betrayal of the Whore is well displayed in the story of Napoleon's coronation as Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire. The Pope was summoned to crown Napoleon in St. Peter's at Rome but just as the Pope was about to lay

the crown on Bonaparte's head Napoleon seized it and crowned himself. Within hours he had confiscated Papal lands, deposed the Pope and rushed him off to imprisonment in a local bell tower.

## 8. The Universal Whore Is Being Led By The Papacy

The Great Whore is now to be associated with Rome and its Catholicism. There is no subtle way to approach this revelation. We cannot put a cheery or loving face on this solemn conclusion. We cannot take away this offense or tell ourselves it is alright, just because those we love have been immersed in her spiritual mysteries and its perverse religion. The only reasonable conclusion remains: the ancient “*Mother of Harlots*” has been taking her lead from the Roman Catholic Church for a thousand or more years and now it is leading her by its efforts toward ecumenism.

The efforts of Pope Francis have sunk worldliness and humanism to new depths have sent ecumenism swirling to new heights merely dreamed of by Popes John, Paul and John Paul II. Francis has gone East, West, North, South and the center of the earth at Jerusalem to persuade people that a ‘new’ Christ is emerging to declare a full humanism that will include all the religions of the world, including the religion that Mankind is superior and has a fundamental right to do and think whatever is best for its fellow man. He has brokered a deal between Cuba and the USA to show the spirit of politics which he has taken on so that the world might become one under the government of Man over Man.

Pope Francis is the new Roman leader overseeing a revolution within not only the Roman See but the world over. This

revolution is the enemy of the true Church, it is a revolt against the Church as well, an attempt to gut the spirit of truth of any and all parts of the Church of Jesus Christ. It is aimed at becoming a religion of Man and the World rather than being a religion for and about the “*called out ones*”. It is an axiom that followers and disciples be subordinate to its leader. In the case of Christians, it is the Savior Jesus Christ who is the leader and no other man can be followed. How can the Church be the head, changing things, deciding things – Jesus is its head and sole leader. Whenever He is not in charge it follows that it is not true Church. When a man is in charge as Francis clearly is, then it must be something else for it cannot be the Church of Jesus Christ. The head cannot take a back seat and let its disciples and followers follow after another. This is axiomatic.

Worse still, Francis I has been riding the Beast round the world trying to further antichrist aims by performing audacious political schemes and acts of daring-do with religious traditions. He is a performer just like his predecessor and namesake Francis of Assisi had been during the religious debacle of the era of The Crusades.

Francis is doing a stellar job of riding the Beast in order to make the spiritual case for antichrist notions of freedom sound hopeful among grassroots constituents of the apostate end-times Christian faith. Francis is making a good show by the effective pretense that the Papacy has not only caught up with the times but it is now a rheumatic leader against old Christian ways in favor of the enlightenment religion called the ‘rights of man’. He

speaks from a hypocrite's platform saying that the Roman Church is becoming practical and free, free to serve the common person regardless of gender or station in life. All the while he is a dictator himself, a sole authority without checks and balances, though they make believe that other catholic bishops have a say. All the while even the Pope does not know that he himself is the puppet of the evil spirits that actually manipulate policy and actions behind the scenes.

Francis will continue, as will his successes, until his day is done. It has all been prophesied that the 'whore' of religion would be used by antichrist powers to help Antichrist gain the world imperial throne from which Antichrist will reign someday soon in Jerusalem's temple. Francis may be that False Prophet spoken of in Revelation. He may just be a forerunner, laying the carpet down for the final successor of the bogus so-called throne of Peter who shall be the one who can perform great miracles in the presence of the Antichrist Himself. It is becoming harder and harder to conceive that the False Prophet will not be The Roman Pope, but only time shall tell.

The myriad of Christian denominations have become the Whore's "*daughters*" and family. They have finally acquiesced to the threats and pressures brought to bear by what was formerly called by historians, the Counter-Reformation. She is currently seeking to draw into her ecumenism any of the other world religions she can. Many religions are beginning to shake hands with Papal influence, including the Jews, through the global ecumenical movement. Together it amounts to the ancient

spiritual whore of which The Vatican is its head and spearheading the efforts to seduce religions, as well governments away from the one true God in exactly the same way a harlot might seduce a husband away from his wife. She has fed the inhabitants of the earth with the wine of her fornication, an elixir of poison that has kept them drunk on false hopes that men can actually live in peace and harmony without oppressing the weak and stealing from the poor. Her idolatry and perversion of truth has caused the world to lose touch with God and has coaxed them into worshiping gods that we as mere mortals have crafted with our own imagination. Where the faithful have resisted she has shouted them down, persecuted them and destroyed their lives. She carries no burden of scruple. She has made the world drunk on idolatry, while, using the imagery of the Bible, she has kept herself drunk on the blood of the saints and prophets.

**If we look closely we can now see the Whore that Rome is**

It is the assertion of The Outcast Eagles that the city referred to in Revelation 17 must be the city of Rome since no other city or power during the last two thousand years could even be imagined to fit the bill. During the last two millennia what city built on seven hills other than Rome has held sway over monarchs, despots, democratic societies, empires, island nations and provincial governments alike? Many commentators have made sound arguments in support of this over the years and we heartily agree with their forthright and courageous studies. Most

of them, however, have held to a dubious understanding that chapter seventeen and chapter eighteen are talking about two separate and distinct spiritual forces: religious Babylon and commercial Babylon. This distinction need not be considered. We have the advantage of time and experience being in some cases as much as one hundred and fifty years further in history than our venerable predecessors who so avidly studied God's Word of prophecy. The Roman Church has a network like no other on earth. The watchful eyes of those who came before this modern post world war era were not in a position to understand, did not give the Papal Whore enough credit for being a universal presence throughout the earth. In this era when travel and knowledge has expanded and increase exponentially in a mere handful of decades, the Whore has spread in power and influence as no other prophetic force on the planet. We feel it is the one spirit of false religion that holds sway in not only the religious sphere of man's affairs but also in the political, social and commercial realm as well.

Granted, we who live so close to the coming of the Lord are armed with the hindsight of time and the microscope and telescope of prophecy to reveal the big picture and its finer details. It is not only possible but it is easier to see the form that The Great Whore, this MYSTERY, BABYLON AND MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH will take in the end.

**Rome's Influence Is Universal**



Her sphere of influence is not only wheedling its way into the pulpits, churches, temples, synagogues and mosques of the world but in the marketplace, social organizations and political institutions of all nations. If it has not done so to date it seeks to. It has sought to bring both the secular and ecclesiastical worlds under her spell for thousands of years. It is prophesied in the bible that in the last days she will accomplish her fanatical goal. Commentators have recognized that The Whore has world-wide influence and in that sense is a universal presence. They have agreed that Rome is the essence and emblem of Babylon today and that the papacy has been the seat of The Great Whore for better than fifteen centuries. She claims, for two thousand years!

In fact her using the name “catholic” to describe herself tips her hand for the word means: *universal*. The word church means: separated ones or true believers. The title Roman signifies the nature of its spirit. The name Roman Catholic Church put together means: the universal believers of the spirit of Rome. Even its name identifies it with a city; The Roman Catholic religion is the only major religion named after a city. All others are named after its founder (Buddhism, Mohammedism, Lutheran) or the type of doctrine (Methodist, Baptist).

The Catholic Church has more than 1.2 billion registered members and is growing. Unlike the eastern and Muslim religions, Roman Catholicism has a powerful presence on every continent in all nations. The influence of the Vatican in the Americas and Africa has exploded in the last three decades, doubling and tripling in membership from 240 million to over 500

million and 135 million up from 71 million a decade ago, respectively. The symbolism of a harlot “*sitting on many waters*” is a picture of universal influence and presence that can only be ascribed to the Catholic Church.

Since the Second Vatican Council in 1963 the Ecumenical Movement has made its effects felt. The reason it has taken off is solely because Rome has given it full support. Due to the revival of the outpouring of the Holy Spirit in the sixties and early seventies Roman Catholic universalism also was given impetus. If commentators of old had our vantage point they would have been able to see, as we do, that there is no sound reason for dividing chapters seventeen and eighteen of the book of Revelation. There is only one woman riding on The Beast, only one woman that has all of this influence in the earth, and that woman stands for the all inclusive judgment that will take place on her spirit and followers in the end. This one spirit, depicted symbolically as a ‘woman’ will dominate all religion before it is all over. This can best be argued when reading the two chapters together discerning no break in their meaning or flow. We see that there are at least four references in chapter seventeen that are used to describe the Whore which are also descriptions used to describe the figure in chapter eighteen. If God meant these two to be viewed as two different spiritual powers why would He confuse us and use the exact same descriptions of her in the next breath? Both chapters are speaking about one and the same power.

18.3 – *“For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of*

*her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her” (Same wording as vs. 17:2)*

18.16 – *“And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls!” (Same wording as vs. 17:4)*

18. 24 – *“And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.” (Drunk also on the blood of the saints and the martyrs of Jesus vs. 17:6)*

18.2 – She is called: Babylon The Great (she is named Babylon The Great in vs.17:5.)

18.18 – She will be burned by fire (she is burned by fire in vs. 17:16.)

To further illustrate our point, the character in eighteen is referred to as a woman, just as in the previous chapter. There is only one woman that contrasts with the sun-clad (the church of true believers) woman and she is the same one throughout the two chapters. God also refers to The Whore as represented by a city in five verses in chapter eighteen. Why would He conclude chapter seventeen by saying this Whore is a city and then confuse us by referring to another city five times in the following 21 verses?

These facts ought to prove to us that the spirit of Babylon, embodied now in Rome with its fountainhead of spiritual power, the Papacy, is universally powerful and identified in prophecy by God two thousand years ago. No other church than Rome can be said to have such influence and power with merchants. Her

merchandise and property all around the world is enormous and her wealth beyond knowing. She owns lands and property in almost every county, town, city and hamlet in every nation on every continent; her wealth in precious gems, gold and art is beyond measure. She makes Bill Gates look like a pauper. No accounting or inventory could begin to disclose the magnitude of her immense wealth. She is the biggest business in the world. If money brings power, she is a behemoth in commercial circles. All other corporations, including Microsoft, IBM and General Motors are micro midgets in comparison to her massive holdings and glittering wealth. The Vatican Bank, though enormously wealthy, holds a mere pittance of her overall wealth. When counting the property own around the world her gross annual income exceeds the GNP of any nation on earth.

At the end of chapter seventeen the reader of prophecy is explicitly told that The Whore is a city that has reigned over the kings of the earth. As we rapidly approach the last hour before Christ's return and the final judgment of The Whore the debate has centered around whether the city is Babylon, Rome or both. If you divide the prophecy into two parts it is easy to say that Rome is the representative of religious power and that a rebuilt Babylon in present-day Iraq will be the center of this commercial whore. But if we do not divide the two but take the prophecy literally that it as "a" city then we must make the choice.

Much of the argument for the city of Revelation eighteen actually being Babylon is that Revelation uses the name Babylon and that there are Old Testament prophecies indicating that

Babylon will be rebuilt and will once again rise to world prominence at the end. But there are other prophecies that are similar in nature to this, using names of other cities to describe a spirit of Mystery Babylon. Ezekiel 26-28, for example, uses Tyre, that great city-state of the Mediterranean, as a metaphor for religion and Satan. In similar fashion Isaiah uses Babylon as a metaphor for spiritual perversity. That Tyre is a metaphor for all that the prideful Whore stands for seems clear. That Iraq was brought low at the start of this century denies any likelihood that literal Babylon will reign over the earth someday in the near future.

At any rate, a reasonable argument that absolves Rome from being The Whore seems impossible to make. The argument that makes The Whore's seat shift from The Vatican City to another place is unlikely and irrelevant in every way. Even if it were to shift it would still be the same spirit of the same whore. If the Pope were to take His things to Babylon and set up shop there then it would still be "Mystery Babylon". But it remains, Rome is the city and the religion, including the spirit of imperialism and oppression of the earth under a world imperial leader, the Antichrist.

There has been no other city that can be equated with this kind of power in modern or even ancient history. Rome has been dubbed the "eternal city" and certainly the universal power. What place could be called a city-state other than the Roman Catholic Church residing in Vatican City as its own temporal power.

Vatican City was established in end-times prophecy by the

Italian government under Benito Mussolini who was trying to revive the spirit of Imperial Rome in 1929. By the Lateran Treaty the Papacy was given a triangular piece of ground in the midst of Rome itself. Vatican City is a sovereign nation that mints its own coins, prints its own stamps with the Pope reigning as its absolute monarch. It has diplomatic relations with and sends ambassadors to, every nation and answers to no other authority but itself. It claims it answers only to God but this is a ruse.

Scripturally speaking, a city is the most fundamental unit of political and national power. It is to government and order what the family is to social and moral structure. Because it is so fundamental to social order God uses it symbolically throughout the Bible. A woman in Revelation chapter twelve and the bride of Christ in Revelation 21 are also likened to a city. In those passages God shows how a city is just an expression of what He offers to obedient followers. Impurities, sin, evil and death are kept out. Peace, great riches, health, enlightenment, sustenance and contentment are within its impregnable walls (Rev. 21). Isaiah 26-28 uses the same symbolism.

On the other hand, the city of Babylon has always stood as a citadel of security in this world for the purposes of providing escape and refuge from God, not to God. The city of Babylon is an expression of man's independence from reliance on God. It started with Nimrod's original city and again we saw it in Nebuchadnezzar's great city-state of Babylon for which he was judged (Daniel 4). In Ezekiel we see the city of Tyre likened to Satan and the Antichrist (26-28).

It may be asked, why then does God use the name Babylon and not come right out and call it Rome? After all, Rome was the existing power and known throughout the world and everyone could have related to it? For precisely that reason God did not call this spirit, "Rome". The persecution that the Church suffered in the first two hundred and fifty years was severe enough without having the Bible calling the Roman Empire the Antichrist Kingdom. The Bible would have had to survive censorship and more burnings than God wanted it to or than His plan could permit. The persecution was severe enough over the years. Estimates as high as 900 million believers have been martyred at the hands of the Roman Emperors, the Papacy and its zealot monarchs. If the Bible had expressly used her name it could have been measurably worse, even to the point of banning the Bible itself. Having said these things, the following 24 verses of chapter eighteen speak for themselves.

**Now we see her sentence carried out**

*"And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory.*

*And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.*

*For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her*

*fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.” Rev. 18.1-3*

Another angel now appears on the scene to administer the final judgment of the Great Whore. Using Arthur Bloomfield’s criteria that every time Jesus appears we are tipped off because He has some characteristic which was used to describe Him in chapter one, we can conclude that this angel is also Jesus. He comes down with “*great power*” and “*the earth is lightened by His glory*”. Only Jesus’ presence could lighten the earth. This great angel is coming to deal out the final judgment to the force that has been His nemesis from the beginning of the redemption story. Since she has been a cancer in the midst of His people and for thousands of years has dominated, persecuted and killed true believers it is fitting that He will be the instrument of her final judgment and destruction. The angel cries out with a mighty voice, a role that is exclusively reserved for Jesus in Revelation. He has the honor of declaring the demise of the arrogant city and spiritual whore. She thought she had set herself up as the eternal habitation of peace and wealth, but now she will be the habitation of every evil and unclean thing. Desolation is her inheritance. She is utterly destroyed and there is nothing of any value or goodness that remains in her. Once again we are reminded that she has committed fornication with the kings of the earth and caused the inhabitants of the earth to be drunk with her adulterous doctrines and ways. There cannot be a religious whore and a commercial whore doing the same thing to the world. It is one



spiritual power influencing the world by a multitude of different means. We are finding out that there is really only one great promoter of the “*deceitfulness of riches.*” Mark 4.19

She has made it religiously correct to worship mammon instead of God. Power and wealth has been baptized by her and the merchants of the earth have cashed in on her shrewd business ways and her religious hypocrisy.

### **A Warning for Believers and the Severity of her Judgment**

*“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.*

*For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.*

*Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double.*

*How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.*

*Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.” Rev. 18.4-8*

We have arrived at a point in Revelation where God’s purpose in exposing The Whore becomes crystal clear. “Come out of her, my people”, He says, “that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that

*ye receive not of her plagues.”* Can any Bible believer have any doubt about the sternness and gravity of this warning by God to His people? He has shown them the enemy from within and, like Lot in Sodom, has told them to get away from her so they will not perish along with her. We are fairly warned: withdraw from The Whore and have nothing to do with her at all.

Two things should become obvious in this warning to depart from her. First, in order to withdraw from her, we must know and recognize who it is that we have to withdraw and stay separated from. That is why we have taken pains to identify The Whore as false religion and apostate Christianity in all its forms. It should be obvious that if we are to withdraw from her then we must identify her and her associates and partners or, in other words, those who agree with her or refuse to depart from her. If we do not know who and what she is then we cannot be sure we are separated and free from her influence. It, therefore, becomes of paramount importance that we understand every part of the revelation concerning her. It is for the protection and deliverance of the true body of faithful believers. Second, if chapter eighteen were about one commercial city of some distant future time then this warning cannot be directed at and has no great purpose for the people of God. It has no relevance for us. What would the people of God be doing in her at the last hours before Jesus' return anyway. What kind of threat is a rebuilt Babylon going to pose for true believers? Are we going to move there, or are Christians going to suddenly be induced to worship Marduk or golden calves? It makes no sense that God is issuing a warning to

come away from some great commercial city because it is a spiritual whore. No, this is a universal spiritual warning about an ancient spirit of idolatry and adultery that is far more subtle than the demonic worship of past pagan days. It has to be. It should be obvious that this is about the one and only Great Whore who has universal appeal and power. It is a repeat of the warning given in II Corinthians 6 by Paul; *“And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.”* Rev. 16-19

The statement that this woman makes in her heart is a religious one, not one made by the secular, heathen world: *“for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.”* God would not be interested in the carnal business world proclaiming their independence from Him. That is a given fact that goes without saying. No, this statement is the voice of hypocrisy, a statement of religious pride coming from the queen of the world’s religion. Her voice echoes the sentiments of the Laodicean Church in Revelation chapter three – the Church so despised by Christ for its self-reliance, self-confidence and dreadful independence from Him. This is the spirit that

announces that it has no need of God and yet it pretends to be His closest confidant and friend, even His wife.

It is ironic that in the end the only thing that reaches to heaven for mighty Babylon is her sins. *“For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.”* She had originally come together to transcend God and reach into the heavens to control her own destiny, but by her rebellion only her sins have reached unparalleled heights. God has promised to return two-fold to her all the cruelty and sin she has accumulated over the ages. She has lived in riches and pomp. The Catholic Church and others that have had the audacity to profess charity and poverty but have lived in opulent palaces like rich misers, parading the streets with jewels and robes of enormous wealth will be decimated in one day never to rise again.

### The World Mourns Her, but Saints will not

*“And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come.*

*And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more:”* Rev. 18.9-11

All the unfaithful people of the world will mourn over her. She

was their religion and their shining example of pride and glory. She needed nothing from anyone. She had it all. She was the queen of heaven. But the believers in heaven and earth will not mourn for her at all. There will be shouts of “Hallelujah” and “Praise God” resounding through the universe.

We cannot help but envision the day that Vatican City with all its wealth, pomp and circumstance, and great pretensions against God will be turned into a smoldering heap of ashes. To borrow a favorite phrase from The Christian Spirit writer, Leroy Gardenier, – Rome, called The Eternal City, will ultimately be turned into: The Eternal Cinder!

### **She Deals In People and Souls**

*“The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble,*

*And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men.”*

Rev.18.12,13

This list of merchandise should be taken as a whole unit. It is a complete list of worldly items that The Whore has trafficked in since the earliest days of her history. It starts with the most valuable of earth’s metals, gold, goes through every other

conceivable thing and ends with the souls of men. The souls of men are certainly not the merchandise of the commercial world. This is the favorite merchandise of religion.

This list is only another argument in favor of seeing The Great Whore in seventeen and eighteen as one and the same. This is a list of the things that the gods of this earth buy and sell. In contrast, God is the merchant of spiritual things and truth. The Scriptures tell us to; *“Buy the truth and, sell it not; also wisdom, and instruction, and understanding.”* God has purchased salvation for us with His own blood and won peace and life for us; these are the things God traffics in and encourages us to purchase. But He outlawed those things the Whore delights to deal in. He forbade Israel to make merchandise of people or wives. But the buying and selling of slaves: and domination of souls and people’s faith has been The Whore’s favorite merchandise.

### She Is Once Again Identified With A City

*“The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,*

*And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls!*

*... And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more*

*in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee;*

*And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.*

*And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.” Rev. 18.15,16; 22-24*

Rome is the abode of the spirit of Babylon. As the body is dead without the spirit, as faith is dead without works, so the city of Rome is lifeless without the spirit of Mystery Babylon. By her sorceries, all the nations were deceived into worshiping false gods and its inhabitants made drunk.

The visions of this evil harlot which God presents us within chapters seventeen and eighteen are among the most foreboding of all Scripture. The sober warning given to the faithful in chapter eighteen – that they must come out from her and have nothing to do with her – should make any conscientious disciple of Christ serious minded in their determination to identify her so they can totally withdraw from her and her influence. So alarming is this indictment that we are shocked and dismayed when we hear it. She is accused of being the persecutor and killer of the saints and prophets of God. She claims to be the blessed one of the earth, in need of nothing and ruler over the kings of the earth, but in reality, she is the Antichrist’s co-conspirator and together they have continually committed spiritual fornication, raped the Church of God, and drawn the world away from true worship to

their false gods and ways. We hear the Spirit saying, “*Come away from her dear children.*”

**Note:**

It is not within the scope of this work to cover the ecumenical movement but you have only to read the Papal Bulls, Encyclicals and Homilies since Vatican II and especially Pope John Paul II's reign to see the overtures being made to all the major religions of the world, inviting them to keep their own false religion and become a part of the One World Church all under the ambiguous banner of being “people of goodwill”.



## 9. Whatever They Can Imagine They Can Do

Looking upon the conspiracy God said,

*“Now, they shall be able to do whatever they may imagine.”*

While Nimrod is the archetype of all antichrists, so the rebellion signified by the Tower of Babel stands as the archetype of all worldly spiritual revolutions against God.

The rebels' defiant song rose from the floor of the Euphrates Valley as, year by year, they sent levels of their clay brick tower spiraling upward majestically high into the clouds. The grandson of Ham had rallied them, goading them to not just a military and political coup against God but a moral and spiritual one. The final objective of the rebellion being to shake off God so they could rule the world themselves without enduring what they considered his meddling interference.

It had not taken the charismatic spirit of Nimrod much effort to convince the rank and file people of this unholy brave new world that they could counter any measure God might take to defeat their defiant purpose. They were taking necessary measures to avert any judgment God might impose to thwart their purpose, even if it were his plan to use another deadly flood to put down the revolution. Erecting a seven tiered tower that rose to the clouds they declared themselves safe, free of God, free from flood. Though God may try to impose edicts against violence, hate or any subversive activity against decency and

good, they could frustrate his judgments. They would make themselves safe of any reprisal or attack.

The condition of heart that God was seeking in a person was just the opposite. They amounted to those things which God had detected in the heart of Noah. They represented the sum and substance of what God approved, they were the reason why God had decided not to end his quest for the heart of the creature called Man. It was love, joy, peace, gentleness ... the things possessed by Noah that God continued to endure the rebellion of mankind.

But men wanted another spirit to lead them, one devoted to selfish lies and oppression of freedom. One that would allow them to take what they wanted, to enslave the weak and to hold nothing sacred but the whims that fed their lust. They wanted no limits put on their greed, no boundaries placed on their oozing and slimy desires. Nimrod promised them heaven, a place safe from God's judgment. He required that they only confide in him. But for this he must be given authority over their souls. So they studied the stars for guidance.

They were taught how to commandeer the story of the redeeming Messiah with magic. They perverted the narrative of the promise which God had taught Adam, the story written in the sky, depicted in the 12 signs of the Zodiac, with their details told by the constellations. They absconded with the story and by it the first formal antichrist religion was conceived. And they believed they could tell their future with this knowledge and thereby save themselves.

But the rebels did not stop there, for the tower was to be their insurance and their refuge in case it did flood again; so God stepped in to disperse them, to put down and to disperse the mad society of the lunatic rebels.

Looking upon the conspiracy God said, "*Now, they shall be able to do whatever they may imagine.*" In his perfect understanding he had endowed the human race with the power to be gods. He had enriched them with knowledge and understanding, imbued their souls with the enormous responsibility of being able to speak intelligibly so they could plan and conjure a thing. He endowed them with physical abilities like hands and mobility so they could adroitly turn those concepts, ideas, hopes and conjurings into things that are, things which bear real effect upon earthly and physical realities and the breath of life itself.

Man was equipped with the liberty to come to his own conclusions. He could ignore God because he had free choice. He could tailor things according to his own whim, for his own use, thinking, declaring, inventing. He could think of it, he could eventually engineer it. Implied in God's declaration about Man is that he someday could find the key to life and live for eternity. Albeit, in a desperate unhappy state. So it was with fitting purpose of his own that God used language to put a halt to the conspiracy. The conspiracy was derailed. The woeful people were sent packing.

God did not tear down the tower however, as we would likely have done. The strange remains still stand today in the plains of Iraq as a monstrous monument testifying to the prophetic reality

that the rebellion still lives, because it most certainly survives stronger than ever in the spirit of the World today. Man, as united against God, has chugged along for these five millennia. A succession of rebellious events have come and gone among the peoples of disparate civilizations over the millennia and the centuries. Some of those civilizations are buried and gone, others are dying and some, like Rome, are in the throes of revival but they all hold in common the history of a Babel conspiracy. Yet nothing like what is happening in this hour has ever occurred. Since the revolution of technology and knowledge which ramped up two and a half centuries ago and has since reached mach speed in the last three decades, the spirit of Babel has invaded the globe knocking on the door of nuclear powers, third world countries, ancient dynasties in the east and every island on earth. The spirit can stake claim to being the actual religion of the world because it encompasses the continents and the seven seas. Now, thanks to technology, knowledge and speed the World can come together unrestrained as they once did in provincial fashion at the Tower of Babel. It is in the same spirit that Man has decided to pin all his hopes on – his science and intellect, while keeping God from interfering.

## 10. Daniel's Dream of the Four Beasts

In the dream Daniel sees the winds of the earth blowing on the ocean and out of the midst of the waters rose up four very powerful beastly creatures.

- The first is a lion which stood on its hind feet and it was given a man's heart.
- The second is a bear with three ribs sticking out of its mouth and it was told to arise and devour much flesh.
- The third is a four-headed, winged leopard and dominion was given to it.
- The fourth is like no other having iron teeth and ten horns and Daniel described it as dreadful, terrible and exceedingly strong. This last beast had a "little" horn come up from the midst of the ten horns and three of the horns were plucked up. And the little horn had eyes like a man and a mouth speaking great things.

But Daniel was troubled and wanted to know what it meant, so he asked one of the angels in the dream. The angel said, "These great beasts, which are four, are four kings, which shall arise out of the earth."

**A Quick Look at Antichrist History**

The four kingdoms have already been identified by Nebuchadnezzar's dream in other places in Daniel (as we shall see) and by history itself. The four kingdoms which rose out of the earth to fight against the everlasting kingdom of God's son are: Babylon (the lion), Persia (the bear), Greece (the leopard) and Rome (the indescribably horrible beast). These are the kingdoms of significant history. They are the powers that matter in God's plan of redemption and the struggle for the souls of this earth. But anyone who knows about history may object that the Roman Empire has been gone now for over a thousand years and since that time there have been other movements and powers that have shaped world history. But not so fast.

A quick look at history tells us that the scepter of Rome has never completely faded away from the face of the earth. The Charlemagne and the Habsburgs in Europe continued the title of the Holy Roman Emperor from 800 A.D. until the First World War ended the monarchy in 1918. Kaiser Wilhelm carried the title Caesar (Kaiser). Napoleon's vision of a new empire was bolstered by his forcing the Papacy to bestow on him the title of Holy Roman Emperor. Papal Rome has continued in the spirit to dominate the beliefs of the people throughout the West. The dream of chapter two describes the partly strong and partly weak condition of the Roman Empire. The interpreter tells us the kingdom would be divided and that it would not be able to get it all together until the Antichrist came.

*“And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdues all things: and as iron*

*that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.*

*And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay.*

*And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken.*

*And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.*

*And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed .." Dan. 2:40-44*

Take some time to re-read the second chapter and especially ponder the words about the fourth empire which is Rome. Consider whether or not it still exists both in spiritual and material realm. Chapter seven shows a further connection between Rome and the Antichrist which is still yet to come in prophecy. Out of this fourth beast come ten horns. In verse 24 we are told that these ten horns are ten kings, later in Daniel we discover that they give over their power totally to the Antichrist (the little horn). The coming of the Antichrist is prophesied in II Thessalonians 2:3 and (Revelation 13 & 17). It is clear that the Antichrist must come out of the fourth beast; therefore it is reasonable to assume that the fourth beast is still alive and well. Deep within that beast is the drive and determination to dominate the world. Hitler came out of that Roman Spirit, Napoleon came out of it.

Another will come who will use the powers of Europe and other “Roman” devotees to fulfill the vision of the Antichrist. Chapter seven can be edifying to the end-times saint because it shows how Daniel’s prophecies have been fulfilled and now all that remains is for the arrival of the Antichrist.

### **All Four Beasts Have Come Just as Prophesied**

Babylon was the kingdom in power when Daniel had his dream of Chapter seven. It was the most glorious of all kingdoms to come and the image of a lion standing on its legs like a man and being given the heart of a man reminding us of King Nebuchadnezzar who was made like a beast but then restored and given a heart of a man.

**Persia** lay just around the corner. Symbolized by a bear the Persians would take the Babylonian possessions and make it a cohesive empire. They set up systems of governors and provinces which could be ruled from a central location. They were renowned for their ruthlessness. Thus: the picture of a bear with ribs in its mouth devouring much flesh.

#### **Greece**

In 340 B.C. Alexander the Great took a band of Greeks over the Hellespont into Asia Minor and within three short years had taken over the Persian Empire. By 332 B.C. Alexander the Great had taken over the known world. Thus: the picture of a leopard with wings. With lightning speed he had subdued the world. But upon his death at Babylon in 332 B.C. the kingdom was divided to



the four winds. His generals made four separate kingdoms portrayed in the symbol of the four headed leopard.

**Rome** vaulted to world dominance during the last two centuries before Christ. It marched the antichrist spirit throughout the world and lived up to the prophecy of stamping the world under its feet. No nation or land could withstand the force of its will. Daniel's dream has come to pass, though it took six hundred years for the first part of it to be fulfilled. Now we wait on just the last part about the ten horns of the Roman Empire and the "little horn". We can take heart because Daniel's amazing vision of the kingdoms of history has already come true, so we know the rest is shortly to come to pass also.

## II. Babylon the Great Lion:

### The Golden Empire

God's majesty and omnipotence firmly established, we can now turn our attention back to "The Redemption Play" and the appearance of the first great empire in God's quintessential plan. The "audience" now sees a parade of well-dressed, sophisticated people marching on to the world scene. The inhabitants of the world gawk with envy at this procession of arrogant and proud nation. The world is awed by their resplendent riches as the Babylonians, by their majesty, captured the imagination and the hearts of Mankind.

Babylonian may not have had a monopoly on pride, but in their day they certainly cornered the lion's share of it. They ate delicate cakes and sweet things as they reclined in fine linens made from fabrics brought by extravagant caravans from the far reaches of civilization. Woolen cloaks of broad design and color and masterful workmanship protected them from the weather. Babylon's noblemen spent their days in luxury and refinement. Culture was both a pursuit and a product. Writing had been invented by their ancestors. The sciences, like mathematics, engineering and astronomy were highly developed disciplines. The city itself was an engineering feat; no! A marvel, that enabled the citizens of Babylon to live in open spaces with a general cleanliness that would make modern cities like Tokyo, New York,

London or Mexico City, with their crowded conditions and burnt out neighborhoods, blush with embarrassment. All first-hand accounts – such as the one by the Greek traveler, known as the father of history, Herodotus – are recorded in agreement: everyone stood speechless in the presence of Babylon’s majesty and power. It should be no mystery that God labeled Babylon, The Head of Gold.

Try to envision this “city”, though it is impossible to compare it with anything in the modern world. The capital of the empire, it was fifteen miles square (225 square miles), encompassed by walls 350 feet high and eighty-seven feet thick. Six chariots – each six horses wide – could ride abreast on the paved roads that capped off the tops of the wall. Twenty-five brass gates better than twenty feet high were stationed proportionately on each of the four sides. The city was divided down the middle by the Euphrates River which allowed for lush farms and gardens, and provided the lifeblood for one of the seven wonders of the ancient world, the Hanging Gardens of Babylon. The city had a comprehensive sewerage system and a municipal water works. On one side of the river the King’s glorious palace loomed, while on the other, the Tower of Jupiter Belus (Baal or Bel) as it was called then – it was actually the Tower of Babel which had been restored and even completed by Nebuchadnezzar – rose high above the walls into the skyline and stood as the center and the symbol of Babylon’s vibrant, occult religious life. A number of lesser ziggurats (religious towers like the Tower of Belus) dotted the city. In reality the city was more a province than a city having

stores and provisions stockpiled in it that could last years and years in case anyone was daring enough, or foolish enough, to lay siege to her. As the Titanic was billed unsinkable centuries later, so Babylonians – and all who witnessed her majesty – thought she was impregnable. The glory of the city of Babylon is almost impossible to believe or comprehend, even in this day of star wars technology.

Just a quick scan of Babylon's glory and magnitude shows why God identified it as the Colossus of Empire's Head of Gold. But, calling Babylon the head also has spiritual symbolism. As the Empire's head it is the seat of the mind – the soul – of the Empire, and as the soul of the Empire Babylon injected false religion into it. Through its religion, the Empire set its direction: that is, to establish the worship of creation instead of the Creator. With the subtlety and wisdom of Satan behind it, Babylon set precedents about worshipping creation that would stay with the Beast throughout its evolution. In the end, revealed in the book of Revelation, Babylon is synonymous with the word whore which is associated with universal false religion. Even the concept of making everybody, on pain of death, worship a great image was used by the King of Babylon and is a prophetic tip-off of the Antichrist's ultimate demand that everyone worship his image at the time of the end.

Babylon's False Religion Chapter 3 of Daniel, the well-known story about the three Jews, Meshach, Shadrach, and Abednego, provides a prophetic and graphic warning about the Antichrist and his blasphemous demands at the end.

These three Jews were accused of treason and sentenced to a fiery death because they refused to do the “sensible” thing: bow down before the idol which the king had set up in the plain of Shinar. To Babylonians, the king’s request must have seemed a small thing, and it must have been hard for the three Jews to resist, especially when the alternative was to be incinerated in a raging furnace. But they did resist and their faith is recorded as a warning against the Antichrist tactic of the end time when the battle over the issue of worship and faith will also be one of life and death. At the end, those who are not willing to worship the image made in the likeness of the Antichrist himself will be sentenced to death just as Meshach, Shadrach and Abednego were. The strategy, with the image of Shinar, as in the end, was supposed to teach people that those who do not worship the idol will lose their lives in a fiery torment, but as usual the exact opposite is true. The true fate of those who worship the false gods of this world is loudly proclaimed by another “watcher” of the Lord, in the book of Revelation,

*“And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand,*

*The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: And the smoke of their torment ascended up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast*

*and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.”*

Revelation 14:9-11

People who worship God will not be put to a fiery death, to the contrary. Those who decline to worship the gods of this world will find life everlasting; and those who do worship the Beast and his image will find a fiery torment in Hell. The faith of Jesus rests outside the worship of things in this world, it does not find its hope in this life or this body, but the faith of God is in the heavens, in the everlasting life to come. Those who worship in truth need not fear the second death of the eternal lake of fire, nor the torment of being lost and alone, forever cut off from the Creator. “Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and have the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12. Only people secure in a personal relationship with God through faith in Jesus Christ will be able to discern between true worship and eternal life and false worship and spiritual death.

It is no light thing that an entire chapter of Daniel is devoted to this great similitude of faith. As in this case, we can be sure that Satan will cleverly subvert the truth disguising his purposes as long as possible, but as in the story of Meshach, Shadrach and Abednego the truth will surface when false religion is resisted by faith. The three were thrown into the king’s makeshift “*lake of fire*”, and the flames were so great that even the men who tossed them in were scorched by the terrible heat and died. But moments later, King Nebuchadnezzar saw three men walking around in the flames unscathed, and was astonished to see

another man with them, a fourth man, who Nebuchadnezzar blurted out, is *“like the Son of God”*. These men not only survived by refusing to worship this original image of the Antichrist, they met Jesus too! There is the true lesson! So impressed was Nebuchadnezzar by the miracle, this man who had set up the Antichrist’s prototype image, that even he was forced by the circumstances to give worship to the true God when he said, *“There is no other God that can deliver after this sort”*. Daniel 3:29 Once again God had used one of Satan’s evil plots to reveal a prophetic truth, because it is prophesied that in the end Satan, the Antichrist, the false prophet, and all their hosts, will be forced to admit that God is the only true God. *“For it is written, as I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God.”* Romans 14:11

In spite of the merciful lessons taught to Nebuchadnezzar, the beast of Babylon persisted in its prophetic mission to fill the earth with Satan’s Creed: the creature must be worshipped rather than the Creator. Who, or what part of creation to be worshipped is secondary. Satan is confident that if he can first rob God of worship that he can ultimately claim victory and get the worship of creation for himself.

Babylon, as the regal lion of the beasts of the Empire (Daniel 7), rules over the others by its soulish influence brought to bare by its false religion. This roaring lion even took worship a step further by institutionalizing the incredible idea that the creature could not only be worshipped, but is even capable of being a Creator. Stealing from the truth, that God molded man from the

clay of the earth, by his own hands, in his own image, and breathed life into him; Babylon dared to believe that us creatures could also mold something from the earth giving it the power of life and death over people, deserving of their honor and worship. In the end the Lord will allow this foolish deception to reach its greatest depth when the Antichrist will be given a magical power enabling him to give an image in his likeness, life (Revelation 13). To an unfaithful world it will seem as if the Antichrist has created life itself. The image will be able to both speak and kill. It will be the final expression of what is in the vain minds of the creature. The creature aspires to be God. But rest assured, the vanity started in Babylon will end in deadly folly.

The vain mind of the Babylonian religion has infested the whole earth and shaped politics and cultures everywhere throughout all of history. The world is ever filling with “beautiful”, and “loving”, and seemingly God anointed ways in which it can worship man and his inventions. How we pat ourselves on the back for creating a living chromosome in a test tube; how we believe we may do anything we desire; how we believe we are God. Deception and false light are at the heart of the “Whore of Babylon’s” gospel. Its garbage is not ordained by the true God, but the Whore’s religion will insist it is. It will even call on God’s name, without shame, whenever it is expedient. Her greatest blasphemy is to dare to say that God is with them. The Whore has no scruples, plays by no rules, and is age-old soul of the Beast. No single force in the hands of men is stronger on earth than these great deceptions passed on by the seductive whore and it is to this soul, this high



and mighty head, that the silver body of Persia attached itself when it descended to the Beast's throne by conquering Babylon the Great in 538 B.C.

All the empires of history have had a spirit, a spiritual power, that controlled it and spurred it on to dominance, but the four spirits of the Colossal image of Nebuchadnezzar's dream which control the four great empires are the ones with the spirit and power of the Antichrist. They not only hold in common the spirit of humanism, they are responsible for filling the earth with it. This humanism is a common enterprise that has its roots in the rebellious tradition started at the Tower of Babel. And certainly, the religion and hopes of the Babel conspiracy did not die with the scattering of the rebels over the face of the earth, or the confusion of languages. The ambition of men to control their own destiny by a unity that opposes God's will has never died; and this humanism, this worship of creatures rather than Creator, is what lies at the heart of any imperial power, and never more so than in the four Antichrist Empires of Daniel. For the next 600 years – before the coming of our Hero – these four monsters march in succession across history's stage, subduing every people and culture in their path, all according to God's script for "The Redemption Play".

## 12. Persia: Second of Four Antichrist Empires

### The Body of the Empire

*“And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh.” Dan. 7:5*

The fall of the Babylonian Empire and the subsequent ascension of Median-Persian Empire to the throne of the Antichrist is the first step in the evolution of the Beast, an evolution viewed in the Book of Daniel from two distinctly different perspectives. The first view shows how the piecing together of the Colossus of Empire is a systematic joining together of one part to another part until Satan’s imitation body of Christ is fully joined into a mature being, complete with a body, soul and spirit, and equipped with capabilities to march through the whole earth. The second view tracks the metamorphosis of the Beast starting as a regal lion and finally growing into an indescribably horrible beast endowed with the power and disposition to ruthlessly crush the entire earth into submission. From either perspective, Persia’s conquest of Babylon in 538 B.C. marks the beginning of the maturing process of the Antichrist Empire.

“The Redemption Play’s” next scene, therefore, opens in the

year 538 B.C. with the Median-Persian Empire preparing to play its role in God's quintessential history as the new and proud owner of the Antichrist scepter. The Median Potentate, Darius, has just defeated the Babylonian army, but the Babylonians, with many years worth of stores stockpiled in the city, have retreated behind Babylon's unassailable walls. There, the overconfident Babylonians smugly jeer at the angry hordes of Median horsemen and Persian charioteers who camp frustrated outside the fabled city's huge brass gates. Babylon's arrogance is to be short-lived however; God's prophecy will not wait to be fulfilled. One Antichrist beast is about to devour another and incorporate it into its Antichrist nature making it fuller, more mature.

Outside the city walls the Median-Persian army works to divert the Euphrates River into reservoirs and soon the river bed leading under an open water gate is dried up. With the way clear the hostile army enters the city at night undetected. Once inside it is an easy matter for the well trained troops to overcome the flabby, unsuspecting Babylonian population. As Daniel reported, the people and nobles of the city were partying and dancing when sudden destruction tumbled down on their golden kingdom.

It must have been tremendously gratifying for Daniel to personally witness the fall of Babylon since it was something his prophecies had specifically promised. Daniel's prophesied Median-Persian conquest of Babylon coming during his own lifetime must have had a reassuring affect on him that the growth of this Beast, as terrible as it looked, was a process of continuing

judgment which would be brought along in God's time under his skillful direction. Chapter 5 of Daniel records the moment that Persia, the chest and arms of the Empire, conquered Babylon, thereby "joining" itself to the head of gold.

### **The Body is Joined to the Head**

Belshazzar, Nebuchadnezzar's grandson, had ascended to the throne of Babylon. Belshazzar presumed himself to be secure and all powerful, but on the evening of his doom, during a great feast (a feast he was holding in his own honor), Babylon the Great fell and he was slain. As his grandfather before him, this arrogant Belshazzar was destined to be an example of the Antichrist's fate. Belshazzar mocked God by defiling the sacred vessels – the same vessels Nebuchadnezzar had taken from God's Temple during the sack of Jerusalem – using them to drink to the gods of gold, silver, brass, iron, wood, and stone – notice these are the symbols of the Antichrist Empires – and by doing so Belshazzar had committed the final blasphemy. While he lounged in decadence, eating and drinking, a "bear" stood at the door ready to devour him and his world and he never knew what was about to hit him. According to prophecy Persia had been prepared by God to be Belshazzar and Babylon's judge and swift executioner. The invading hordes ransacked the city, pillaged the palace, executed the king, and became the rulers of Babylon and the world, all in one night!

## The Persian Empire Took Control of the 'Meat and Potatoes' of Everyday Life

Persia, as the body and arms of the Colossus, provided form and substance to the soul which Babylon had already created for the Beast. Persia tightened its rein on people by centralizing the government and introducing the world to the original "Big brother is watching you" order. There was no surveillance equipment, no television, no telephones, no telegraphs, travel and knowledge had not grown to the extent it would in the last days, but the Persians developed a sophisticated means of control through a well oiled chain of provincial governments that led back to the Empire's Capital, Persepolis. A system of satraps (governors), closely regulated provinces (states), with organized taxation and census taking, fully bureaucratized, was rigidly adhered to throughout the kingdom and finely tuned over the next two centuries of Persian domination. This network of provinces gave the empire a hold over economic life and provided a workable system of control in naturally hostile lands enabling Persia's omnipotent ruler to keep a death grip on the laws, religion, and politics of the natives in even the most remote territories. Every aspect of village and hamlet life was under the watchful eye of the "Bear". The silver arms of Persia had sprouted the hands necessary for keeping a firm grip on its provinces. Babylon had instituted a religion well suited for the Antichrist's purpose and had devised a scheme that would make the world

submit to it. Persia now provided the Empire with the means to control the “meat and potatoes” of everyday life.

In his dream of Chapter 8, Daniel saw the Persian empire push to the south, to the north, and to the west, – Map 5 pictures the fulfillment of this prophecy – and Persia certainly expanded the Empire’s domain in those three directions. Satisfying its gluttonous appetite for conquest with vicious and brutal methods of terrorism, the devouring bear of Persia munched up everything and everybody in its path. Daniel’s vision of the bear standing upright with three ribs in its mouth being told, “Arise, devour much flesh!”, is a hard-hitting picture of the bloodthirsty, repressive nature of the Median-Persian spirit of Empire. Like any wild beast which gets a taste of blood the Antichrist Beast would be, from now on and throughout the rest of history, a man-eater. At the time of the Iranian-U.S. hostage affair in the late 1970’s there was a stir in the world over the Iranian (Persian) government’s repressive, torturous methods of control. The reports of torture and death shocked some, but they are not at all out of character for the spirit of the Persian Empire, or the spirit of the Antichrist in general. The cruelty of Persia is legendary. The devouring, cruel, abominable, ruthless and satanic methods of Persia became an inherent part of the Empire forever. Tales and stories of Persian cruelty and unthinkable tortures pollute history books everywhere and are too troubling even to tell, but an example out of Daniel’s own experience will give a clear testimony as to the brutality of the methods which Persia injected wholeheartedly into the Beast.

## Daniel and the Lion's Den

The omnipotent king of Persia – influenced by the flatteries of his close counselors, who were also conniving enemies of Daniel – decreed that for a period of 30 days no man should make petition to any god, but him. (A decree with prophetic overtones foreboding the imposed restrictions of the Antichrist at the end when no one can buy or sell without being fully subjected to him.) Any offender was to be thrown, without appeal, into a den of hungry lions. No man was allowed to seek his God in prayer or in worship; the king was to be relied upon and worshiped exclusively, as if he were the one true Savior. Once again, the conspiracy of Antichrist religion to wrest worship away from God was surfacing.

This outrageous decree had a dual purpose, however. Knowing Daniel would continue to pray and worship before the Lord no matter what the consequences might be, his enemies concocted the plan with the specific purpose in mind of destroying the prophet. The first part of the plan went as expected. Daniel, even though he remained a trustworthy servant of the government, one who had won the great admiration and respect of the king, continued to pray to his God in spite of the threat to his life. The conspirators laid in waiting, ready to pounce on their first chance to catch Daniel on his knees in prayer. It did not take long before the dastardly conspirators had the opportunity to gleefully turn Daniel in to the king to be torn to shreds by the waiting lions. The king's heart sank and he immediately regretted signing the

decree into law, but he had painted himself into a corner. Given no choice but to back his own decree or undermine his authority, the king labored in vain all day and all night to find a loophole that would allow him to circumvent his own command, but in the end, there was nothing the powerful ruler could do to help his servant. Helpless, this supposedly omnipotent ruler was forced to condemn his faithful servant to death. Reluctantly, the king pronounced sentence and allowed Daniel to be shut up in the hungry lion's den. As a last resort, even the king was forced to break his own law. Turning to God for hope, the king made a petition of his own and encouraged Daniel that everything would be all right, saying, "*Thy God whom thou servest continually, he will deliver thee.*" For the king – of whom it might be said that he was trying on the shoes of deity for a limited trial period – it was a huge admission to say God could deliver Daniel when he, the King, could not. Again, in spite of the pretensions of the Beast and its ruler, God had forced the pretender to relinquish his claim.

On the next morning, when the guards rolled away the stone from in front of the den the king's promise that God would save Daniel was proven correct. As with the three Jews in Babylon, God had saved Daniel, the man of faith, from death. The king was so pleased that he bestowed further honors and position on Daniel and as in the case of Meshach, Shadrach and Abednego, the tables of justice were turned on the band of conspirators when the king ordered them cast to the waiting lions, and to the



fate they thought had been so carefully contrived for God's prophet.

### **The Beast and Its Hatred for the Jews**

The well organized bureaucratic system managed from a central point and anchored by ruthless oppression of liberty is the major contribution Persia made to the evolution of the Empire. No person was born, or died, or made money, or got married, without the government's desire to know and record it. Persia gave the Empire body and in that lies Persia's crucial and important contribution to God's quintessential history.

But there is one more thing. Persia holds the notorious distinction of introducing a particular evil into the Beast's character that would be at the very heart of the conflict with the nations and their competition in the centuries to come. Hatred of the Jews.

### **Satan Always attempts Genocide Prior to Israel's Possession of the Promised Land**

Persia injected the Beast with the virus of senseless, unrestrained hatred of the Jews. Down through history this hatred has been wanton, often it has been motivated by jealousy, sometimes the Jews have been political pawns used as scapegoats to cure the world's ills. Just prior to World War II an author warning the Jews

about the coming conflagration predicted the Jews would become victims in the battle between the nations once again, writing, “the wheels of progress in the world have always been greased with Jewish blood.” No one alive today has to be told how perfectly accurate that statement was and is. Many times, not just in World War II, their persecution has swelled to a fever pitch; imprisonment, violence and killing followed. The Jews have been the world’s whipping boy; any excuse, any accusation, any suspicion serves as reason enough to attack them. On occasion the persecution has grown to its ultimate, as in the case of Persia when it manifested itself in the worst of possible ways with the attempted genocide of the entire Jewish people. Genocide of the Jews was not new to history, Satan’s first plot to exterminate the Jews came with Pharaoh’s attempt to slaughter all of Israel at the Red Sea, and it was quickly tried again during the Jews subsequent wanderings in the desert when Balak tried to coerce God into cursing Israel hoping God would become impatient with their idolatry and destroy them out of frustration. It is no coincidence that these genocidal plots against the Chosen Nation came as she was moving toward the Promised Land to take possession of it. These original schemes of genocide set a historical precedent that would reappear like clockwork at two very crucial points during “The Redemption Play”. Both times, just prior to Israel’s return to the Promised Land, Satan’s Antichrist plot to exterminate the Jew resurfaced. The common denominator in genocide is that it precedes the return of the Jews to the land.

There have been three times in history when God was moving the Jews to possess the land: in 1400 B.C. when Moses led Israel out of Egypt; in 426 B.C. when it was time for their return after 70 years of captivity in Babylon; and in A.D. 1948 upon their return for the final days after World War II. Each time, when God has readied his people to take the land, there has been a satanic conspiracy to exterminate them, but each time God has foiled the plan, and in fact, used Satan's own plan to facilitate the return of his people to Israel.

### **Persia Attempts Genocide Just before Return from Babylonian Captivity**

The second conspiracy of genocide and the subsequent return of Israel to the Promised Land came at the very beginning of the Persian reign and is recorded in the wonderful, wonderful Book of Esther. Prophecy was being miraculously fulfilled at this time. The words of Daniel were coming to pass, the Jews were authorized to return to Jerusalem, the walls of the city were being restored, and the Temple of God was about to be rebuilt. This is the time of Nehemiah and Ezra; the fulfillment of the returned captivity of the 70 years in Babylon prophesied by Jeremiah and confirmed in Daniel (chapter 9); and the enemy was in a fury to avert the return of the Jew to the promised Land.

The thrust of the Book of Esther is about the high prince of Persia named Haman, and his personal satanically inspired mission to wipe all Jews from the face of the earth, and how God

used two Jews and King Ahasuerus of Persia, to confound Haman and his genocidal conspiracy.

The trouble started when Mordecai, a faithful Jew, refused to bow to Haman as the Persian nobleman passed before him on his daily trip to the palace. As a Jew, it was not right for Mordecai to give any man such worship, but Haman's pride and anger grew each day as Mordecai continued to refuse to bow before him. Egged on by Satan, Haman devised his antichrist plot. By bribery and flatteries, Haman weaseled his way into the favor of the king, where he immediately convinced him that the Jews were the mortal enemies of the state, a threat to the king's authority, and a menace to order throughout the empire. The king, under Haman's instigation, agreed to set a special day and hour when all Jews would be eliminated. King Ahasuerus announced the date for the general extermination and it was posted in every community and province throughout the Empire. Haman, licking his chops, went immediately home and built a special gallows in his courtyard on which to personally hang his hated enemy, Mordecai.

The Jews and Mordecai seemed doomed. But God had made a way to deliver his people. Shortly before Haman's plot, the Lord had touched the king's heart to elevate Mordecai's adopted daughter, Esther, to First Queen of the Kingdom. Hoping Esther's influence could make a difference, Mordecai asked Esther (who did not know she was a Jew until Mordecai informed her) to intercede in behalf of Israel to the king (who also was unaware that Esther was a Jew). To do so however, was a very risky

business, even for the First Queen. And not just because she was a Jew, but because Persian Law demanded that anyone daring to enter the presence of the king without first being summoned was to be put to death. Under the law, the only reprieve came if the king raised his scepter to receive the uninvited subject. Esther was forced, however, to take the chance because the date for the Jew's extermination was drawing perilously near. If the Jews were to be spared Esther would have to act at once. Bold in faith, Esther put her life on the line and interceded for her people the next day. As she entered the king's presence his heart was so touched and he was so overcome with love for her that he not only lifted up his scepter to receive her, but he promised to give her anything - anything she requested - even half of his kingdom.

Esther did not act brashly, but, being lead by the Spirit, merely requested that the king and Haman come to a special banquet, saying only that she would make known her desire there. The king, accompanied by the evil Haman, came that night as requested, but again Esther delayed her request asking them both to return as her special guests the following night. Again the king happily consented. In the interim God's supernatural plan began to unfold and, just as with the conspirators who thought to throw Daniel to the lions, the tables were about to turn on Haman.

The turn of events began with one of God's "coincidences". After the king returned home from the first banquet he found himself unable to sleep and asked to have some of his records

read to him. In the reading, it was accidentally discovered that a man named Mordecai had uncovered a plot to assassinate him some years earlier. The king was disturbed to find that nothing had ever been done to thank Mordecai for saving his life and decided to honor him without delay, that very next morning. Seeking counsel, the king called, of all people, Haman, and posed this simple question to him, “*What should I do to a person I want to honor?*”. Haman, with predictable conceit, thought the king meant to honor him. Presumptuously, Haman advised the king to clothe the man in the clothes of the king, put him on the king’s horse, crown him with a crown, and have him led through the streets by one of the king’s high princes, who should proclaim as he went, “*Thus shall it be done to the man whom the king delighteth to honor!*” Imagine Haman’s horror when he learned the man to be honored was the man he had conspired to hang. To make it even more horrific, Haman was chosen to lead Mordecai through the streets, forced to publicly declare the honor of the man he wanted to kill. And the worst was yet to come!

After suffering so great a humiliation Haman still had to attend the banquet that night. At the banquet Esther dropped the big bomb, asking not for half the kingdom, but for the lives of her people, and the judgment of Haman and his house. The king’s heart was turned instantly against the weasel, Haman. As the king stepped outside the banquet hall to consider the fate of his high prince, Haman fell on Esther’s bed where she was reclining, appealing to her mercy. The king entered to see this and was infuriated further, blasting Haman for daring to force himself on

the queen even in his presence. Just then one of the king's guards told the king that Haman had erected a huge gallows at his own home where he had planned to hang Mordecai, whom the king had just honored that morning. Without hesitation the king barked, "*Hang him on it!*"

Granting Esther's request, the king promptly turned his previous proclamation around granting the Jews special status in the empire and licensing the slaughter of those who had made preparations to slaughter them. More than 75,000 conspirators were slain that day.

Haman was hung on the gallows he had built for Mordecai and his ten sons were executed. Instead of wiping out the seed of Abraham, Haman's seed was lost forever. Esther was strengthened as First Queen; Mordecai was given the position, home, lands and all the wealth, of the dark prince Haman. Mordecai had been given what Haman had schemed to own, and Haman had gotten in full the judgment he had conspired for Mordecai and the Jews. God loves irony in his judgment. He loves to give evil conspirators the very thing they conspire to do; as a favorite message of the Bible preaches, you reap what you sow.

Still, Satan will not let up; though he is powerless to prevent the wonderful irony of God's judgments. The story of Esther is a recurring one in history: the attempt by Satan and his Antichrist to exterminate the Jew before he can return to the Promised Land. Pharaoh and Balak tried it and were destroyed, Haman tried it and was destroyed, and Hitler tried it and was destroyed. This attempted genocide is a fulfillment of the prophecies of

Moses, of the prophets, of Jesus, and of the Epistles: that the Jews would be scattered, hated, and killed for the sake of the Gentile world and for the salvation plan of God. This hatred of the Jew explodes in Satanic fury whenever the seed of Israel is about to occupy the Promised Land. And it is during the time of Persia that the Antichrist Empire is infected with the virus of genocide.



## 13. Greece: The Belly and Thighs of Brass

### The Rise and Fall of the Antichrist Empire

*“And as I was considering, behold, an he goat came from the west on the face of the whole earth, and touched not the ground: and the he goat had a notable horn between his eyes.*

*And he came to the ram that had two horns, which I had seen standing before the river, and ran unto him in the fury of his power.*

*And I saw him come close unto the ram, and he was moved with choler against him, and smote the ram,. and brake his two horns: and there was no power in the ram to stand before him, but he cast him down to the ground, and stamped upon him: and there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand.”*

Dan. 8:5-7

More than any other, Greece is the empire of a single man, only the Antichrist Empire at the end will be more dependent on its leader. This leader is more than a leader, he is a “savior”, a “god”, he is the heartbeat of the Greek Empire, just as the Antichrist will be the heartbeat of the Beast at the end. Having all hope and direction flowing exclusively from the spirit of its demigod leader is the main contribution Greece made in the evolution of the Beast. Because of that, The Redemption Play’s next scene opens with a blonde headed boy of nineteen sitting on a throne of brass,

surrounded by adoring subjects with the world lying at his feet. The young man is the legendary Alexander the Great, the brass throne speaks of judgment, the throngs around Alexander are the people of the world which he will seduce by his false gospel, and the globe beneath his feet is symbolic of his conquest of the world.

Daniel's prophecies of Greece are among the most incredible of all history. Much of prophecy is veiled in symbolism and allegory so only the spiritually minded are able to see them; not so with the prophecies about Greece. The Greek conquest of the Persian Empire, the fantastic rise of its great king Alexander, and the sudden splintering of the empire into little parts, are all events clearly foretold by Daniel so that even the most carnal of historians may recognize and marvel at their fulfillment. And because the prophecies about Greece are like the proverbial two-by-four in the donkey's face, the "audience" of Mankind is without excuse if it remains ignorant about the miracle of prophecy. Thus God's symbol for the Grecian Empire: brass.

In the Scriptures, brass is often used to denote judgment. The articles of the Temple relating to sin and repentance were of brass. In Revelation the legs of the glorified Christ, as Judge of the Church, are brass. Likewise, the symbol for Greece is brass because the prophecies concerning Greece are a judgment on the accepted view of world history. Clearly understandable for all, the prophecies about Greece and Alexander the Great testify to God's Providence over governments and over the destiny of Man. They are a miraculous alarm alerting the academic world and its

historians that God's Word, which revealed the fate of Greece 200 years before it happened, is the one primary source that leads to the understanding of history's fundamental quest: What is it all about? The prophecies about Greece are so dramatic and undeniable that they cry out against the pretensions of worldly history which would make the answer to the quest more complicated than it actually is. These prophecies bewail the folly of any man who shares the antichrist hope that he can be "saved" by some frail mortal from his own sinful ranks. The prophecies of Greece judge the world because the force of their spiritual truth is established in history and men would rather flounder in a sea of confusion looking instead to their own puny understanding of Mankind's destiny.

### The Great Conqueror

The first parts of the prophecies about Greece foretell the takeover of the Median-Persian Empire by Alexander the Great. Chapter 8 of Daniel (verses 5-8) presented the world with this outstanding prophecy over 200 years before it happened. Fittingly the prophecies' fulfillments began violently.

In 336 B.C. Alexander's father, Philip of Macedon, was assassinated and though the circumstances made his teenage son a prime suspect in the conspiracy he immediately stepped into the breach decisively seizing the reins of power. At once, the greatest whirlwind military and political career in the world's history was launched. Alexander's mother, ever insisting on his

divine nature since his birth, spread fables of his divinity and wisdom throughout the city-states of Greece. Already perched to unite behind the late Philip, Greek states enthusiastically threw their legions behind Alexander with a zealotry never before seen among the nations. Within no time Alexander was charging ahead with reckless abandon acting on his ambitions for world conquest. Just as the prophecy had promised, Alexander led a great force of Greeks from out of the west to confront the “two-horned ram” of the Median-Persian Empire and as the prophecy had promised, the he goat (Alexander) crossed the waters at the Hellespont, which separate Europe from Asia Minor, and crushed the armies of Persia. The year was 334 B.C.; and the entire Persian Empire, with all its pomp and wealth, lay prone before a man barely turned twenty years old.

Again prophecy was fulfilled when Alexander (not satisfied with merely ridding his nation of the Persian threat that had for so long threatened Greek independence and sovereignty) insisted on owning the world. Against the will and desire of most of his generals Alexander pursued the Persian King, the symbol of world power and authority. With a devil’s obsession he personally stalked the beaten and humiliated king across the expanse of the empire, through cities, into wildernesses, over deserts and into the remote province of Bactria (Afghanistan). Refusing to rest until he destroyed the king personally, Alexander finally came upon the king’s rotting corpse in the desert, a victim of assassination by a member of his own family. Alexander had cast down the ram with great fury and within three years all

resistance in the Empire had been crushed and “there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand.”

### Alexander Provided the Spirit for the Beast

Alexander had not only fulfilled prophecy by destroying Persia, but by his personal exploits and charisma he was in the process of creating a spirit in the Beast that would lay the foundation for the Antichrist who would someday sit in God’s Temple and proclaim himself to be God. The beasts used to symbolize Greece – revealed in the dreams of chapters 7 and 8 of Daniel – are used in the prophecy because they have the same characteristics of the Antichrist person.

Chapter 7 shows the kingdom as a leopard while chapter 8 sees the man as a he goat with one horn in the middle of its head – a unicorn! The leopard is swift to pounce on its prey and the unicorn is the mystical, legendary beast with supernatural powers; both beastly powers were manifest in Alexander the Great. With the speed and vitality of the leopard and the supernatural power of a unicorn, Alexander captured the entire world. He subdued every opposing army, and as important as any conquest of territory, he captured the world’s imagination. Alexander is unequalled even among Antichrist figures for his military genius and his bold charisma. In a meteoric rise, foreshadowing the Antichrist of the end, he took over the known world in a single decade while only in his twenties. So astonishing is his life that the world still worships and marvels at it today, still

lingering in the hope and anticipation of the “second coming of Alexander”, hoping his successor will bring order and unity to a crisis ridden world. It is the longing for the Antichrist; the false savior. Greece had the gospel; and Alexander had the spiritual power to preach it.

Daniel promised that this coming king would be “very great” and indeed he was. At the height of his power Alexander became increasingly lifted up in his own mind. He even became convinced that he was God. Alexander laid the groundwork for all aspiring antichrists to come when he proclaimed his own deification while on a demonic pilgrimage in Egypt. In 332 B.C. at the age of twenty-four, while in the great pyramid, Alexander was visited by Satan, and the divinity that his mother had claimed for him was confirmed when he was told that he was the son of Amon-Ra, and anointed the “Son of God”. Alexander became convinced of his mission to unite and save the world. The “office” of the Antichrist – as the anointed son of Satan – was born in the beast of Greece, this empire of Alexander. To commemorate and establish his coronation as a god Alexander built a Capital city in Egypt and named it after himself. Alexandria still stands today; a monument to the coming false savior; a beacon of Greek humanism and its preacher and god, Alexander. From then on, this driven Antichrist demanded the worship of his troops and subjects. The soul of the empire had been given by Babylon, Persia had supplied the body and now Greece breathed life into the Beast by giving it a spirit, instead of worshipping mute idols

and the work of men's hands, the Empire now worshipped man himself. God was among them!

### The Anti gospel of Humanism

The he goat waxed "very great" and as a false messiah Alexander spread the gospel of Greek humanism across the Empire. His obsession became his personal doctrine of the "Brotherhood of Man", nothing more than a spiritual expression of the conspiracy of the Tower of Babel. Alexander promised that Man could be reconciled to his fellow man regardless of sin, regardless of God's terms, regardless of truth. Man's idea of fairness, justice and unity would rule the day. Alexander not only preached Greek humanism and introduced its philosophy into the Empire, he lived it.

Hoping to begin a new dynasty of a united race, he married Roxana, a Persian Princess and they had a son of mixed blood to represent the uniting of the Persian and Greek worlds. He preached the gospel of Greek reason and the glories of man as if they were God's Word. He set about to indoctrinate and reform the whole earth with Satan's word and Satan's call to unity. Greek mythology belittled God by teaching that the heavens were full of corrupt, lustful, and fickle gods which was actually a true mirror of demon powers instead of godly traits. The defiance of the gods by Man was glorified. The gods were not to be trusted. Greek philosophy taught the world to worship the reason of man.

Biology, metaphysics and mathematics were installed as “The Way, The Truth, and The Life”.

Alexander, personally tutored by Aristotle, the guru of Greek philosophy, had been thoroughly schooled in all aspects of Greek culture and life. Satan had carefully prepared his “son” for the calling of the Antichrist. The Greek way of life also glorified militarism, and physical achievement. Philosophically, the individual was a little god unto himself. Athletics, endurance of pain, exploits in battle, were all virtues of manhood. Greek politics subverted God’s sovereignty with man-made declarations of freedom and liberty. It was the first expressions of the doctrine of Man’s inherent good, that the majority can and will make the right decision. The Greek religion taught that the gods were jealous and vindictive and were not to be trusted. Even though God had declared Adam and his seed to be dead in sin, and in need of God’s salvation, Greek philosophy insisted that Man was Man’s only hope. The democratic government, with its rule by majority, became Greece’s political legacy and served as the forerunner for Alexander’s expanded version, “the Brotherhood of Man”, where the promise was given to all men that the world would be a fair and secure place for men to follow their own desires and will. It was the first promise of a world government, for the world, of the world, and by the world. The first promise of a “New World Order”.

These things made up the belly and the thighs of the Empire. They are the power and the spirit of the Empire. And it was Alexander, as its spiritual leader breathing the spirit of humanism



into the body and soul of the Empire, that made the Beast come alive. But the time for the actual Antichrist and the ultimate confrontation between God's Kingdom and Satan's Empire had not yet come. Instead it soon became time for Greece and their Antichrist leader to be judged according to the prophecy in Daniel.

*"Therefore the he goat waxed very great and when he was strong, the great horn was broken; and for it came up four notable ones toward the four winds of the heavens."* Dan. 8:8

Alexander's greatness swelled to enormous proportions in the few short years of his life. He took over the Persian Empire, Egypt, and subdued the Far East, all the way to India. By the time he was 32 he was master of the world, its declared god and its savior; but at the pinnacle of his career, at the height of his strength, he was broken. While planning a sea voyage for further conquests, Alexander was suddenly stricken with a fever at Babylon and died, at the age of 33. It was again an ironic judgment; the man that had declared himself god in Egypt had been judged in the height of his glory in the place where the conspiracy of Empire all began, in the religious Capital, Babylon.

Alexander's death came so suddenly and early that he had no time to prepare an heir. His only son was still a baby and his empire was not solidified enough to hold together without his personal antichrist influence. His powerful generals rushed to seize control of their own armies securing little empires of their own. The great horn was broken; and now, just as the prophecy had said, the kingdom was blown to the four winds.

Map 6 shows both the world empire of Alexander and its fragmentation after his death. The prophecy told that the empire would not go to the posterity of its antichrist leader and that is exactly what happened. Alexander was cut down, his only son murdered, and the dreams of a “Brotherhood of Man”, Alexander’s political Tower of Babel, were scattered, like the empire, to the four winds. As promised, four notable generals cornered their own areas – a fifth king back in Macedonia, soon gave way to his father in Asia Minor who was one of the four – and through these four kingdoms, the gospel and culture of Greece continued to rule in the earth. For the next two hundred years, these little competing Greek empires infested all the cultures of the Empire with humanism. Babylon had given the Empire its soul, Persia had conceived its body, and now Greece had given it spirit and hope by providing it with a glimpse into the type of doctrines it should have and the kind of Man who would someday come to lead it. The body, soul and spirit of the Colossus of Empire were fully formed and joined together. Now the Beast was ready, its belly full with the lessons of all three who came before it, ready to walk into all the earth complete with its false religion, centralized system of control and gospel of humanism. Enter the legs of the Beast: Rome.

## 14. Rome: Legs of Iron/ Feet of Iron and Clay

*“And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdues all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.*

*And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters’ clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay.*

*And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken.*

*And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.*

*And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever.*

*Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.” Dan. 2:40-45*

At first the “audience” hears just a faint clatter coming from somewhere off in the distance, but little by little the sound closes

in, until the deafening roar of crashing footsteps fills the earth. Before the curtain for the final scene of “the Beast” draws up, the “audience” is besieged by the sound of marching soldiers – marching – marching – marching – an endless stream of fighting men cascading over the earth, carrying into every nook and cranny of the Empire the false religion, anti gospel of humanism, and repressive government of the Beast. Finally, when the thundering subsides and the curtain rises, the “audience” of Mankind is confronted with a terrifying, horrible, unnatural Beast standing atop the world stomping it to pieces. Legions of finely equipped soldiers dressed in silver armor and plumed helmets salute the monster, while cowering people bound in chains bow before it. The “audience” has heard and seen the real Rome.

Rome is the legs and feet of the Beast. Nothing Rome lusted after was out of its reach. In 500 B.C. Rome was just a snake in the grass having conquered only Italy. But like a hungry monster lurking in the bushes Rome gradually, very slowly at first, pushed its way north and west; and then out into the Mediterranean Sea conquering every island and outpost it came upon, until it had gained control of the breadbasket of the center of the world. By the second century B.C. it had moved into North Africa, and in 168 B.C. it conquered Macedonia and Greece. By 44 B.C. Julius Caesar’s Rome had pushed further west into Gaul (France) and had crossed the sea and reduced mighty Egypt to a lowly vassal state totally subject to the Beast’s whims and demands. Shortly thereafter, Middle Mesopotamia, Persia and the Babylonian regions were secured. Eventually, the Empire was extended north

into Europe all the way to the British Isles where colonies were established. Finally, the jewel, Israel was taken along with the city of Jerusalem. By the advent of Christ, Rome's control was complete; its influence was all encompassing, and in fact became so obtrusive, that there is literally nowhere in the world today, no continent, where Rome's influence does not dominate. Rome completed the transformation of the Empire from mere beast to a supernaturally all-powerful Beast. Only the Antichrist dominion of the end, under the regime of the Antichrist himself, will have greater expression and dominion than Rome had during its Golden Age. As Daniel had seen, "*the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: for as much as iron breaketh in pieces and subdues all things: and as iron breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.*" And break and subdue it did!

### Total, Absolute Control

Rome's world dominance lasted better than four centuries and at the height of its glory its control was absolute. Rome set up an ingenious method for keeping all parts of the Empire in communication which enabled it to collect tribute and keep a military presence in full readiness even in the most far flung parts of the Empire. The proverb "All roads lead to Rome" was both literal and figurative. Not only did the Roman road system connect the world as one big wheel with Rome at the hub; but its network of roads, along which lay strategically placed garrisons of Rome's finest fighting men, was comprehensively designed to

keep the world under its watchful eye. All taxes, all requests – all hope – was funneled to Rome, while all the world’s decisions, all judgment – all hope, flowed out from Rome. All of the world’s industry was in Rome’s iron grip. All trade, all commerce was regulated by Rome. Rome devised a sophisticated postal system for governmental and military communications. Ultimately, absolute control of every aspect of life allowed Rome to institute Man’s replacement for God’s word: Roman Law. The system of Roman Law is a code that remains today at the foundation of judicial and civil law for every modern industrial nation. By its military might and strict law Rome ruled with an iron fist and through its “might makes right” politics, Rome imposed a “Pax Romana”, or the Roman Peace, on the world which lasted nearly three centuries and continues to live as today’s standard bearer for the hope of world peace.

Each of Rome’s predecessors had a spirit prince guiding it (Dan. 9), and the spirit prince guiding Rome had certainly learned all the lessons of Empire well. Rome had accomplished a peace and unity just as the vision of Daniel had declared. True it was iron and clay stuck together in an unnatural way, a precarious way, held together by the brute persuasion of the Beast, but it was still stuck together. The symbols used: man-forged iron, and man-sculpted potter’s clay, suggested that the “Pax Romana” was a man-forged, man-sculpted unity and peace rather than one divinely created. The prophecy clearly declared that any such unity was a temporary illusion doomed to failure, as all the works of men are doomed; but, for men confined to the vision of this

world, the “Pax Romana” – seemed then, as the hope of reviving it seems now, to be an eternal force, just as the city of Rome is even today blasphemously called the “Eternal City”.

Indeed there was a time when the Empire seemed eternal, and because its influence has lived on through the entire Age of the Latter Days it has been eternal in that sense. Its power was overwhelming because it had assimilated the energy of the other three empires; it had the religious soul of Babylon (even carrying its obelisks and other articles of mystery worship from Egypt to Rome), it had the highly organized imperial government of Persia, and it had the spirit and humanism of Greece. Rome blended all this into one and added not so subtle finishing touches of its own to make it – a dreadful and terrible, exceedingly strong, Beast.

*“After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.” Dan. 7:7*

## **Rome is the Crudest of All Empires**

The first three empires were truly beasts among beasts, but even they pale in comparison with the horrid beastliness of Rome. Diverse from the others because of its devastating cruelty and unmatched strength, with its iron teeth devouring whole empires and its heavy foot stamping all peoples into submission, Rome turned the Beast into the ugly task master that prophecy had

vowed it would be. Nebuchadnezzar was told that his was the greatest empire and that – as the symbols indicate – the empires would grow increasingly inferior as they succeeded one another. Babylon, symbolized by gold, is the great one; Persia, symbolized by silver, is less great; Greece, equated with brass, even less; and Rome, the last empire, symbolized by the basest of materials, iron and clay, is the least great. The kingdom's growing baseness is symbolized further in chapter 7 when the beastliness of each kingdom is unmasked. Babylon, the greatest and most majestic empire, is symbolized by the regal lion; the symbols then degenerate in splendor to a bear for Persia, a leopard for Greece, on down to an indescribably, horrible and unnatural beast for Rome. But – as the Empire wanes in sophistication and temperance it increases in cruelty and cleverness. The digression is not that the Empire becomes weaker in power and dominion, but that it becomes more and more inferior in ability to administer God's truth or dispense with any sort of righteous judgment. The Empire's opposition to God increases as each beast increasingly distances itself from him, so that eventually the Beast becomes stone deaf to God's voice. This mounting ignorance and disregard for truth is illustrated by the Empire's eroding respect for God. A repentant spirit fell on Nebuchadnezzar after God's judgment fell on him. Even the Persian kings were willing to be used by God to rebuild Jerusalem and the Temple. But those attitudes gave way to the spirit of Greece, culminating in the arrogant defiling of the Temple by Antiochus Epiphanes who sacrificed a pig on God's altar in 170



B.C.; and then reached the ultimate depths with the show of ignorance and unbelief, when Rome's representative, Pontius Pilate, disdainfully said to Jesus, "What is truth?" and washed his hands before turning the Messiah over to be mocked, whipped and unjustly crucified.

No, the Empire's growing inferiority is not in worldly power; to the contrary, its power and influence increases steadily. Rather it lies in its growing disregard for God's truth. The kingdom degenerates so that it finally turns into a totally self-intoxicated Beast, ignorant of the true God, with a vicious, but high sounding false religion employed to bewitch the world and disguise the gruesome fact that it is a man-eater. Step by step, the Empire becomes inferior in light: a kingdom shrouded in the darkness of Man's own inventions and imaginations, where black is white and truth is ridiculed as fiction. Persia, with its inferior spirit, began the backward evolution; Greece, with its humanistic faith continued the slide; and Rome with its thirst for blood and love for perversion brought things to rock bottom.

Opposition was crushed quickly and without mercy by mass slaughter of innocents, public flogging, crucifixion, and by using men, women, and children in the gruesome exhibition of deadly sports. Slaves were taken from among conquered peoples, used up, and thrown away like disposable dish rags. Taxation often pushed peoples to the brink of starvation and enemies of the state were whisked off to jail, enslaved, or often, summarily executed. The judgment of Rome was swift and without mercy

for any unfortunate who did not bow to its authority and merciless power.

### **Rome Won the World's Heart**

Though Rome's cruelty and brutish nature was unmatched, there was another side to the beast, one more clever and subtle. By duping the world with false hopes and enticing it with carnal rewards for placing faith in Man, Rome won the hearts of the world. Roman citizenship was idealized throughout the empire and the Beast freely dished it out to conquered subjects or foreigners alike, to anyone who wanted to eat from the platter of faithlessness and become part of the Roman unity. As time progressed the offer literally became one that no man could refuse! According to the spirit which Alexander had introduced, the Emperors in Rome were deified and the alternative to bowing down to Rome's leader was even less pleasant than the judgments handed out by Babylon and Persia for refusing to kneel before their idols. Demanding a unity of worship and belief throughout the world by outlawing worship of God on pain of death and insisting on the worship of its "god", the Emperor, gave the world a cohesiveness. Roman Law, and not God's Word, was everyone's judge; Roman citizenship and achievement, and not God's inheritance of eternal life through Christ, was supposed to be Mankind's lasting heritage; the Emperor, and not God, was the one to be worshipped. There was no freedom of choice, no deviation, but Rome held the world together with the glue of

intimidation and force. It was Rome's unremitting, crude way of trying to forge Alexander's "Brotherhood of Man".

## Persecution of God's People

Stuffed in the same sack along with Roman pretensions of unity and law was hatred and intolerance for the truth. With so much hinging on its humanistic hopes, those who held to the truth, as in Babylon, Persia, and Greece before, became enemies of the State. Babylon had tested the killing of men who worshipped God on an individual basis; Haman had tried in Persia on a mass scale to get rid of God's Chosen People; and the Greeks had slaughtered and persecuted Jews in Israel after their return from captivity; but now – now – there was a new player in the game: the Christian. Rome not only had the Jew to persecute, it had the newly born Church to hate as well, and like everything Rome did, it combined the tactics of the three previous empires and implemented them with its own unique brutality.

With the advent of Christ and the birth of the Church, Satan put Israel on hold for awhile and made the vulnerable, though invisible, nation of Christians Rome's primary target. Anyone caught worshipping God and Jesus Christ was to be put to death. It was the same old tactic only with much more desperation and fury behind it. Satan's persistence paid some dividends. Worn down by constant assault and seduced by its desire for esteem and worldly acceptance, the Church began to compromise its faith, rejecting the Holy Ghost and conceding to political

methods and pagan practices of worship. By the third century A.D. the “great falling away”, prophesied in the epistles and Revelation had taken root in the Church. Satan and his Antichrist Empire of Rome had refused to let up on the people of God. Rome had destroyed the temple in Jerusalem in A.D 70 and sold countless Jews into slavery, while throwing true believers of Christ to the lions, or burning them at the stake, or crucifying them, or killing them in some other vicious manner. Satan’s two-pronged attack of seduction and intimidation was turning the Church into an apostate body, alien to the one the apostles had built two hundred years before. The Antichrist power embodied in Rome was awesome; it was a mature beast able to subdue faith and demand the worship of all peoples.

If God had not intervened the Roman Empire would have crushed the Church and forced the world to submit to the Antichrist vision of the end times. But it was not yet time for the final confrontation. The salvation of Christ was just beginning to be offered to all men everywhere. So to buy more time, God afflicted the Empire with his prophesied delaying tactic: division. It was all according to the vision of Daniel some 750 years earlier.

### **Beast Thwarted by Supernatural Division**

*“And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potter’s clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of iron, for as much as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay.*

*And as the toes of the feet were part of iron and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken.” Dan. 2:41-42*

The initial split of the Roman Empire took place under Constantine I when he removed the Capital of the Empire to Constantinople in A.D. 306. Soon the Empire succumbed to internal rot and cracked into two rival parts: East and West. With typical irony God used Constantine’s conversion to Christianity as a primary cutting edge in the split of the empire. The Eastern part started by Constantine, later known as the Byzantine Empire, spanned ninety emperors and lasted 1,058 years from A.D. 395 to 1453. The Western half fell to the invading barbarian Goths from the north in A.D. 410 which began Europe’s descent into the Middle Ages and the rise of the feudal system. Later the bishop of Rome seized the reins of authority in the West and for better or worse, mostly worse, the Papacy became the major unifying force and one of the most powerful ruling dynamics of the European part of the dormant Roman Empire. Though the Eastern part of the empire was the more stable of the two, the real power always lay in Rome, and because of that God kept the West, the European part, in a constant state of turmoil and chaos. By dividing the Beast into competing parts, thus keeping the West weak by divisions from within, God was able to hold the Beast at bay until its appointed time at the end when it would once again surface to fulfill its final destiny as the Beast of beasts. Revelation speaks of the miracle of that day when Rome will once again come together:

*“The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.”*  
Rev. 17:8

We must remember that ultimately the Antichrist is both a kingdom and a person; this duality of the Beast as both Empire and individual is fundamental to understanding “The Redemption Play”. As Alexander was to Greece, and the Caesars were to Rome, so the Antichrist will be to the Antichrist Empire. The Empire makes the leader; and the leader breathes life into the Empire. Only at the end will Empire and leader be joined together fully, when the division and weakness of the Empire is lifted and the “Man of Perdition” rises up out of obscurity to take his place in infamy. During most of the Age of the Gentiles the Beast has lived in a dormant state, a prophetically imposed hibernation, divided among itself, pining for the appearance of its head so he can once and for all lead the Empire and fulfill the vision of the Antichrist as laid out in Daniel. The Empire, like a wounded animal, with its body, soul and spirit torn apart by division from within, survived. Miraculously, Rome has continued to live on in various forms through this entire age; but in spite of its relentless struggle to revive its former glory and strength, it has always been kept at bay by God. Rome’s struggle, and the opposition God raised up to harass Rome, is the sum and substance of the history of the Age

of the Gentiles and is succinctly mapped out by the vision of Daniel in chapter 11.

With the coming of age of the Beast the curtain comes down on Act 3. The major players have been created and a villain has risen from their midst. Our Hero, waiting in the wings, is about to appear. God's Word is about to become flesh and dwell among men. Act 4 will feature The Hero's true message and his true faith. The conflict over Redemption is ready to be played out.

But there is another new player besides our Hero, one from among the nations, one introduced into "The Redemption Play" whose primary function will be to confound, harass and compete with the Beast so that God can buy the time to offer salvation to men everywhere before his promised judgment falls on an unbelieving world. Like the Antichrist, this new player also develops an anti gospel of its own to counteract our Hero's Gospel of Truth. Act 4 covers the nearly two millennia since our Hero's birth, the time of history labeled Anno Domini (A.D.). "The Redemption Play" calls this 2,000 years, the Latter Days: days of salvation and days of competition between the Beast and the new player, the King of the South. These Latter Days, days when the Word of God becomes flesh and is fully revealed to anyone in the "audience" of Mankind with ears to hear, are days of great light and faith, but they are days of great struggle and darkness too. No good play is complete without drama, and even though the greater suspense is taken away because prophecy reveals the ending, suspense still lies in the battle for each individual heart of those seated in the "audience". Will a person hear God's Word and

do it? or, will he ignore God and follow after a false gospel? In Act 4 the war over redemption intensifies as the Gospel of Truth pits itself against False Religion and its anti gospel of humanism which often masquerades shamelessly as God's Word. The salvation of each and every person hangs in the balance. The world's inhabitants cannot serve two masters.



## 15. Vision of Antichrist Empire Down Through the Ages

### From Babylon to the End

The chapter of Daniel we undertake to study here concerns the Antichrist government, its apparent glory, its temporal nature and ultimate judgment into oblivion. We are invited to believe in the eternal rather than the temporal, urged to cast off our faith in man's government in favor a living faith for the eternal pure government of the kingdom of God which is to come. The faith which we are led to acquire is the faith on exhibit by Daniel, one of miraculous deliverance from the hands of unreasonable men and the government of this world at the hand of the providence of God. Daniel serves us as the archetype end-times believer and the kind of faith for the miraculous protection of God which would be required in the last days, just before the return of Christ. The temporal nature of the Antichrist kingdoms and the faith needed for deliverance from its deceptive and unreasonable hands are the prime revelations of chapter two of the book of Daniel.

King Nebuchadnezzar was frightened by a dream from God because it showed the vanity of man's great works 'under the sun' and the futility by its fading existence, no matter how brilliant or glorious the work may seem at the time. Nebuchadnezzar had built a great empire and a majestic city with 'wonders of the

world', then God showed how fleeting it all was, in the same fashion that he had shown Solomon the vanity of all of man's laborious endeavors. He was angry, depressed and agitated in spirit. I guess we can all identify with him, who wouldn't be depressed?

The Bible tells us that a day is as a thousand years with the Lord, and a thousand years as one day. We can gain great wisdom from this passage of scripture if we will regard it and take it seriously. God's perspective on time is entirely different than ours. We sit on the inside of time like figurines in a glass bubble looking out; God is everywhere -inside and out - everywhere, even on the outside of time peering in, seeing all that is, and all that has been, knowing what will be because he has been there, was there, is there. Time is merely a blue-print used by the omnipotent architect, a spade in the gardener's hand, a group of files on the desktop of eternity. Time is very small compared to infinity. Infinity has no end or beginning and is ever expanding, not confined by time or space, where the Holy Ghost presides overall, where The Son is, full of love and light, which is infinitely powerful, in eternity both before and after the now, love and light are the actual, true, real, solid, definable dimensions themselves, of which someday we shall become, not only aware, but an integral part of ourselves.

**The Antichrist Kingdom will be returned to dust**

Logically, every empire and government on earth, no matter how

marvelous and eternal they may seem – as the Roman Empire or the United States of America – is destined to a prescribed end. Their story written and filed long ago, before the dimension of time ever started to tick. No empire or government is on par with God and the infinite government of his power. They are a very small pea in the vast eternal. The only eternal is that of God and there shall never be a government of man to co-exist with God's just and true reign of righteousness because man cannot produce a righteous government to compare with the righteous ways of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost. It is a ridiculous thing to even think so for one tick of the clock or one moment in time. The chapter of Daniel now under review declares that the earthly man-governments of glory, though glorious in our eyes, are very small; the temporal nature of man's oppressive and frightened rule of man and the ultimate, total victory of the kingdom of truth to be administered by Love itself – this is in the infinite and is the one big thing in eternity that is taking place on this earth. The work of redemption of man and bringing him into the kingdom of God is the main thing being done on this planet. The one thing that will be carried from this earth into eternity, when even the earth, after a thousand year rule of Christ on earth, is swallowed up by time, rolled up like a Hollywood stage set, and time shall be no more. "*The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord*" are the words spoken by "*great voices in heaven*" in chapter eleven of the Book of Revelation. Heaven's outburst of joy, comes right after the seventh angel has blown his trumpet to initiate the final 'Woe', which is the great and terrible

day of the Lord. *“And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign forever and ever. And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God. Saying, we give thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.”* Rev. 11:15-17

God’s seizure of earth’s government at Jesus’ Second Coming is one of the major events in the history of the world and mankind. Chapter two of Daniel gives the end-times saint an uncluttered, simple statement about the promise God has given his saints for the reign of His perfect government on earth and into eternity. It details the evolution of world empires and prophecies of the climactic and electrifying moment described above when the ever-growing kingdom of Christ will be established for those of mankind who have entered safely into Love’s eternity.

### **Quick Scan of World History in a King’s Dream**

The King of Babylon’s prophetic dream and its divine interpretation given to the prophet Daniel is intended to be an anchor for our belief so we can know that the full victory of the kingdom of God will come, but not until man’s government has been given a full chance and proven to fall short of real truth and righteousness. This requires a full and complete historical evolution and process, a history that can be studied and reviewed

by surveying the course of what is commonly referred to as Western Civilization. God wants to inform the end-times saint that victory over the influence of the world and its governing power will not come without personal struggles of faith and hard won spiritual battles while overcoming persecutions, exploitation and spiritual oppressions of “The Beast” (the ‘Beast’ being the collective spirit and power of the empires of the West until they finally evolve into the fullness of the ‘Beastly’ Empire of the Antichrist at the end; as revealed in the course of Daniel’s history.) But even while living in the midst of the Beast, God was faithful to deliver Daniel out of all his troubles and trials so that he could minister faith and pray for the people of God.

### **Daniel and the Wise Men Escape Certain Death**

Typical of man and his government, the king of Babylon made an incredibly unreasonable request of his advisors and ministers that included a death threat upon them if they could not solve the king’s problem. Daniel was included in the number of ‘wise men’ who were to undertake the impossible task and once again Daniel found himself in a predicament from which only faith in God could deliver him. The situation was utterly hopeless from a human standpoint. The all powerful Nebuchadnezzar was extremely agitated by a troublesome dream which he suspected had been given him by the ‘Most High God’. Afraid that his magicians, astrologers and Magi priests would deceive him with a purely concocted interpretation of the dream he concocted an

unreasonable scheme to insure the integrity of the interpreter and the validity of the interpretation. He refused to tell his dream to any of the court 'wisemen' or counselors, demanding instead that the dream be told first, and then he could be sure that the interpretation was a valid one. Naturally, no one could come up with the dream. As the wise men of Babylon said, *"It is a rare thing that the king requireth, and there is none other that can show it before the king, except the gods, whose dwelling is not with flesh."* The king, being all powerful, but not always reasonable, became infuriated. Summarily, he decreed that all wise men in the kingdom should be put to death. Panic gripped them. The only way to stay judgment would be if someone could tell him his dream and give the interpretation.

The number of the doomed included Daniel and his fellow Jewish courtiers, Meshach, Shadrach and Abednego and the rest. It was a hopeless position. There must have been a lot of wise guys booking passage on the first caravan out of town. But in hopeless situations, where there is nothing a man can do, in weakness, when all hope is gone, God can do great things to deliver us. This, it would seem, is the sort of faith God would like to grow in his servants and saints in these fading days just before Christ's appearing in the clouds. Daniel is a prototype for us, a true spiritual archetype, standing in for us to show us how to react when we have life threatening situations pressed down upon us. Often situations come down upon us without cause or rational explanation or in fairness, situations in which we are pressed, in turn, by the grace of God to ask for, and believe for,

His miraculous deliverance. He will give his end-times saints understanding and knowledge about the wisdom of the ages and the boldness to tell it to those to whom they are sent. Telling the mysteries of the ages and such things as prophetic truths may even be a matter of life and death, if not for those saints themselves, for others who will be saved by the telling of it. As was the case in all the lives of the courtiers which were saved through Daniel's asking God for the dream and the interpretation, and his subsequent boldness to tell it all to the king (though its interpretation was not flattering or hopeful to the king and could have easily incurred his wrath). Daniel was forced into a great act of faith by circumstances created by the hand of Providence. The prophet, in the role of prototype end-time saint, asked for a little time, but he had to believe that his God would, and could, do the impossible. He and his friends prayed together that God would reveal the secret of the dream to him. Of course God heard the prayer of his faithful servant and answered it revealing Nebuchadnezzar's dream word for word, picture by picture, to Daniel in a "night vision". Daniel thanked God saying, "(God) changeth the times and seasons: he removeth kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: he revealeth the deep and secret things: he knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him".

The lesson for the end-time saint is that we, like Daniel, can be privy to the secret things of God by faith 1 Cor. 2:10, and that we should believe that no government or leader rules, including communist, atheist, fascist, or any other, unless God allows it.

God can do all things, even change the way things operate. All timing is in His control. In short, the end-time saint can bank on the truth that there is nothing that is out of God's total dominion or power. The way God chose to have Nebuchadnezzar withhold his dream, and then have Daniel come up with it and its meaning, was done to prove to us that nothing is hidden from Him, including the future or intentions of man. This, when understood and believed, should create a change in the way we approach our relationship with society and politics and the faith we hold in them for bringing salvation to the world.

Should it not?

### The Dream of the World's Empires

The dream was given to Nebuchadnezzar because he had wondered what the future held for his kingdom and the kingdoms which were to follow on this earth. It was a simple dream beginning with the picture of a colossal and glorious statue. Daniel, by God's mercy, was given precisely the same dream. The great statue had a head of gold, body of silver, legs of brass, and feet made of a mixture of iron and clay. In the dream, a stone "made without hands" descended from heaven and crashed down on the feet of the statue breaking them to pieces causing the image to crash to the ground where it immediately dissolved to dust and was blown into oblivion by the wind. The stone which had hit the image then suddenly grew until it became a mountain



and covered the entire earth. Daniel then told the king the interpretation.

*“This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king. Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory.*

*And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath he given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou [art] this head of gold.*

*And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth.*

*And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdues all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.*

*And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay.*

*And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, [so] the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken.*

*And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.*

*And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom*

*shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.*

*Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter.”*

verses 36-45

In telling its meaning, Daniel says “the interpretation thereof is sure“. History and time have proven Daniel to be 100% correct. And its fulfillment is one of the means by which our faith can be bolstered to know that God’s kingdom, known as the Millennium is certainly coming.

## THE KINGDOMS OF WORLD-SPIRIT

### **Babylon: Head of Gold**

Nebuchadnezzar’s Babylon, the kingdom that God used to judge Israel, was the first great world power of God’s quintessential history and the one in power at the time of the prophetic dream. This kingdom was called the ‘hammer of the whole earth’ by God and its rule was harsh and oppressive. It had an extensive system of law, religion and economy that held political sway and military authority over the entire Mediterranean from Tyre and Jerusalem, Egypt to Carthage and Spain. Babylon desired to rule over the souls of men as well. It tried to force its subjects into idolatry and wherever the spirit of empire was to go thereafter Babylon remained an integral part by

way of its influential spirit and the precedents it set for the empire.

### **Persia: Arms of Silver**

Persia followed on the heels of Babylon when it took over the reins of empire in 538 B.C. The transition from Babylon to the second empire came to pass during Daniel's lifetime and must have given him even greater encouragement that the prophetic dream was true. The city of Babylon was magnificent. As the capital of the empire, the city of Babylon had walls 15 miles square, 350 feet high and 87 feet thick. It had room on top of the walls for six chariots to ride side-by-side. To Daniel or any contemporary, it must have been unthinkable that Babylon could ever be conquered. The abrupt end and judgment by Persia's conquest of "the head of gold" is told later in Daniel. The Media-Persian army entered the impregnable city of Babylon by damming up the Euphrates River which ran through the center of it and entered through an open aqueduct gate and began a two hundred year imperial rule of the West. Naturally, the Babylonians had made no provision for attacks inside their city fortress. The army went through the city unimpeded, killing the defenseless people along with Nebuchadnezzar's grandson-son King Belshazzar. Persia's most significant addition to the Empire was its government organization (as arms of silver) reaching out into every province and locale with a strict bureaucratic control over its subjects. In this essential way Persia fulfilled its prophetic role in the evolution of World-Spirit Empire.

### **Greece: Belly of Brass**

It took 200 years before the next part of the prophecy would be fulfilled and it took Alexander the Great (more is told about him later in Daniel) of Greece to conquer the Persians in 332 B.C. With 40,000 cavalry and infantry Alexander made one of the most improbable advances in history conquering the hundreds of thousands strong Persian forces and extending the Greek world into India and Egypt and fulfilling in dramatic form the prophecy of Daniel concerning the Greeks. The Babylonians had brought idolatry into the soul of the empire, the Persians had brought strict bureaucratic controls, and Greece now brought the spirit of humanism and leadership by a single Antichrist figure, Alexander the Great.

Alexander's vision was of one-world, a so-called 'brotherhood of man', a spiritual revival of the Tower of Babel, where men had gathered together to oppose God and forge their own destiny apart from their Creator. It could be said that Babylon had given the kingdoms of this world soul, Persia had given them body, and now Greece had given them the spirit of antichrist. Its leader was certainly the forerunner of the Antichrist who looms ominously on the horizon as we enter the 21st Century.

### **Rome: Legs of Iron**

Rome is the fourth, and most celebrated, of those kingdoms of the West designated by God as the conglomeration of kingdoms which would form the construction of the World-Spirit, called Beast. Together, formed by Rome's induction, into one Empire they stand in direct opposition to the coming 'stone', that Rock of God. Daniel was shown this Empire as representing the Empire's

evolution into a mighty and powerfully dominant force on earth. Starting in 168 B.C. Rome gradually engulfed the world and by the time of Christ held an iron grip over the nations of the West, having turned the Mediterranean Sea into a 'Roman Pond'.

Rome is important the same way an answer to a mathematical problem or equation is all important: it is the summation of the spirit and soul of all the preceding kingdoms and holds its aspirations and life's blood within its own makeup. It represents Satan's hopes and will and actually embodies the efforts and tactics of Satan's army of spirits and their principalities and dominions presiding over the nations of mankind. Rome incorporated the antichrist characteristics of Babylon, Persia, and Greece and honed them to a razor sharp precision with iron clad power. Rome is the symbol of the legs of the Empire because it was used to 'walk' the spirit of empire into every hemisphere and onto every continent of this earth where they embedded them into the political life of all nations with a Western heritage. The fact prophesied by Daniel, that Rome's feet are of clay, partly strong and partly weak, and always weakened by division, history has proven. Whenever the empire has grown too big so that it might try to unite the entire world before God's timing, it has fallen prey to infighting or been beleaguered from outside forces, as with the Muslims and Turks.

Prophecy affords us the advantage of the 20/20 vision of hindsight. It allows us to see clearly into the truth without doubt or reservation, without the obstruction of man's confusion and limited, myopic vision. Even a scant look at history lets us see

clearly how incredible and accurate the king's dream was and how perfect Daniel's interpretation.

The historical reality of these kingdoms, that they were seen by the king of Babylon in a dream 2,500 years ago, interpreted and recorded by a man of God, are intended to give the end-times saints faith that no matter what things look like, God knows all. His kingdom will win out, just as He has promised. We should have courage to put our faith on the winning side and forsake hope or faith in the affairs of the governments of this world no matter how enticing the temptation to rely on man's righteous sounding government may be.

### **And The Kingdom Shall Not Be Left To Other People**

*"... and the kingdom shall not be left to other people"* are just a few words from chapter two that easily can be overlooked. Sandwiched in the middle of a single verse they are nevertheless words with great implications for the end-times believer. Though their meaning might seem obvious at first, they are wonderful reassurance for the end-time saints, as well as a tip-off. And God knows, we need to be reassured and educated from heaven in these last days.

### **Kingdom Not Left Behind**

It is said, you can't take it with you, but in Christ, you not only can take it with you, if you are wise you will be doing everything you can to store up treasures in heaven. Of all people, the Christian is most blessed, but only if that Christian hopes and dwells in the spirit in heavenly places pinning their hopes on the life to come and not in this transient world in which we are only

pilgrims and sojourners. As the apostle Paul puts it, *“If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable”*. We who know Christ know this instinctively. But many of us can miss this blessed way of life if we don’t acquire faith in it and one of the primary ways to acquire faith for it is by the Word of God, the prophetic Word to be specific. People in the world, even great men such as the genius Nebuchadnezzar who ruled the world, work their whole lives building and creating kingdoms of their own and in the end they must leave it behind for they can carry nothing with them. We the pilgrims, who are called to work and labor for Christ, can work in a kingdom which we shall not have to leave to other people. We can work for eternal treasure. The preaching, teaching, good works, distribution of God’s love, etc. in any way, is work that is going toward lasting and eternal things. That is what Jesus meant when he said, *“Store up treasure in heaven where moth and rust doth not corrupt.”*

Daniel saw in the dream a stone (Jesus) come down from heaven and strike the image in its feet (Rome) and the image was shattered into dust and blew away. Daniel saw the stone turn into a giant mountain which filled the whole earth. The interpretation was this: *“And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.”*

As we labor in the kingdom of God we should know that we are working for the winner and for eternal things. We are working for things that will last. The prophecy in chapter two of Daniel tells

us that we can take it with us because we shall not leave the kingdom to other people, but we must have our hopes in the world to come and not in the deceptive world of men's politics and their vain promises of justice and utopia.



## 16. The Millennium

*“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.*

*And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years.*

*And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.*

*And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.”*

Rev. 20.1-4

As Act 6 opened with the Antichrist sitting on God’s throne, Act 7 opens with the rightful heir to the throne, Christ, sitting in a cleansed Temple on his beautiful and glorious throne. A rainbow is above him, he is encircled by the Apostles and the Patriarchs of Israel and in his hand is a rod of iron with which he will rule the nations. This is the Christ seen in the opening chapter of Revelation – his hair is white as snow, his eyes blaze like fire, his feet are like brass glowing in a furnace and when he speaks his words are heard above any noise on earth. Israel, the world, and

all its people, are at his feet, finally under His exclusive leadership.

But because of this picture, the Millennium is an oft misunderstood age. Common presumption has it that this 1,000 year period will be a perfect age of bliss, filled with nothing but peace and tranquility. – But hold it a second. Though it is the perfect 1,000 year rule of the perfect king it is not quite yet time for the Utopia that God has promised for those who surrender their will to him.

Chapter 20 of Revelation explicitly declares that, while Satan will be chained up for those 1,000 years, he will be allowed to lead one final rebellion at the end of the Millennium. In the prophetic word we are told that any nation which refuses to go up to Jerusalem during the Millennium with offerings of worship on the major feast days will be punished for their indifference by being plagued with drought. The Lord, the Scriptures say, will rule with a rod of iron along with his saints. Such prophecies presuppose a need for discipline. And if there is a need for discipline then everything is not in perfect harmony with God's will just yet.

Still, despite contentions, the Millennium will be a period of great rest for the earth and its people. A thousand years is as one day to God notes 2 Peter 3.8. Just as God worked the first six days and rested on the seventh, so he has labored with Man and Man's government for six thousand years (days), and for the last thousand years (day) the world will rest under the perfect government of Christ. A young man, we are told, will be 100 years old. The lion will lie down with the lamb. Nature will be in unison.

Justice will prevail. Righteousness will be a constant force emanating from Christ's holy throne in Jerusalem. Restoration and redemption of all things will begin to take shape.

### **Man's heart is Desperately Wicked**

There will be, however, a wild card stirring up problems in this harmonious world which will cause imperfection and disruption. This time it will not be Satan's fault, nor will he be able to be blamed, no, Satan will be chained in the bottomless pit, this time the rebellion and sin in the world will be the exclusive responsibility of Man. Jeremiah was moved by the Holy Ghost to reveal the truth about Man's "goodness" when he declared, "The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: Who can know it? I the Lord search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings." Jer. 17.9-10 Much of the Millennium and its redemption work will be to bring out the truth about Man and his deceitful heart.

At the end of the 1,000 years Satan will be unloosed and sent out to deceive the nations, and the nations which "number the sands of the sea" will surround the camp of the saints and the holy city in battle against God and his people again. How can it be? After Jesus's death and resurrection, after his second coming in power and glory, after his perfect rule, Satan will still find millions who think there is a better way. Only the all consuming fire from God sent to totally destroy the nations will put down

the final rebellion. Satan is then thrown into the lake of fire, the same lake where the Beast and the False Prophet were sentenced to 1,000 years earlier. There, the unholy trinity will be tormented night and day forever.

At the end of the Millennium the book of judgment will be opened and all those who have not been resurrected yet will be judged according to their works. Death and Hell will be cast into the fire. And anyone not found in the book of life will also be cast into that dreadful lake of fire where Satan and his cohorts languish.

After 7,000 years God's work of redeeming Man unto himself will be done and our eternal relationship with him will stand bright on the new horizon.

## 17. The Vile Person

### That Man of Sin

The name “Antichrist” has been the subject of speculation, gossip, creative writing adventures, and legitimate research for centuries. The increased popularity in this figure during the past couple of decades is undeniable. Simply listing the number of motion pictures that take a page from “Antichrist lore” as part of their plot would be a laborious task. Attempting it for the printed word is next to impossible. One would think that with this increased interest in this evil being that the general public would have a reasonable understanding of who the Antichrist is. Nothing could be further from the truth, and this is exactly as it was planned. Satan is quite happy, thank you, with the way the Antichrist image is portrayed and made light of in society today. Very often the centerpiece of a movie or book is to entertain the masses, the Antichrist however is anything but entertaining to those with a knowledge and understanding of prophecy. To those with ears to hear and eyes to see, this deception being carried out today is both horrifying and much anticipated. Horrifying because of the depth of the deception being carried out, very often touching family and loved ones. Much anticipated because prophecy has assured us that this has been predicted. With each passing day, we not only draw closer to the fulfillment of all

prophecy, the rapturable draw closer to meeting the Lord in the air.

### Why Look For The Antichrist?

Many Christians do not believe that spending time considering the Antichrist, or studying prophecy for that matter, is a fruitful thing to do. We should be looking for the return of Jesus, our Savior. No argument here with looking for Jesus' return, but it only serves to urge us on concerning the study of prophecy. We believe that the rapture could occur at any second, even now. We believe that it will come before the seven year tribulation begins, when the Antichrist appears on the scene for all the world to see. We do not intend to be present during the great tribulation when dealing with the Antichrist and his kingdom will be a matter of life or death.

Looking for the Antichrist is not really the point. Gaining an understanding of the vile person that he is, learning about his spirit and behavior, serves the end times Christian by issuing a warning about the Antichrist spirit. Antichrist the man will be the embodiment and personification of a spirit that is already alive and well in the world today. It has infiltrated and become an integral part of today's politics, religions, governments, philosophies, societies and cultures. We study prophecy and the Antichrist's role in the end times so that we will not be seduced or overwhelmed with the Antichrist spirit, and miss the rapture.

It is important to dispel rumors about the Antichrist so that we

can see the signs that God has already told us about in His word.

## **The Real Truth**

In order to make this deception as slick as it is, Satan has used the only source of the true story about the Antichrist, the Holy Scriptures. By lacing today's entertainment with documented accounts of the Antichrist and his mission in scripture, Satan helps man make a mockery of prophecy, keeping as many people as possible resistant to hearing the truth about his true plans. You see, the Antichrist is not Man's invention. His origins are from the Bible and the entire story of the Antichrist, its system, its kingdom, and the man can only be found within its pages. Commentaries on scripture, particularly on Daniel and Revelation, can be helpful and revealing. That is why I'm sitting here right now. But the Bible is the one place that believers must turn to for their knowledge and understanding of what the book of Revelation calls "the Beast".

In this short paper we want to talk mainly about the Antichrist as a man; who he is; what he is; where he will come from; what is his purpose. An in-depth study of the Antichrist reveals that we are not just dealing with a man here, but the system, kingdom, and spirit of the Antichrist. Daniel chapters 2, 7, 8, 9, 11 and Revelation 13, 17, and 18 present a clear picture of the kingdom and the man; or the beast and the man. He will be the leader of nations, and often when referred to as the beast, he is a group of nations. The Antichrist kingdom. The reader is urged to seek

these truths out. The references contained at the end of this writing are an excellent start to beginning to understand how real the Antichrist spirit is in the world today.

### **Beholden to the Vile Person**

In contemporary treatments, the Antichrist often appears as a violent, beast-like creature, red eyes, deep gravelly voice, sinister scowl, the whole bit. He overcomes his enemies with great strength, power and intimidation. This is not how the Bible portrays his rise to power:

*“And in his estate shall stand up a vile person, to whom they shall give the honor of the kingdom; but he shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries.” Dan.11:21*

This verse, along with 23 and 24, teaches us about the character and method of operation of the Antichrist, as well as the Antichrist spirit. He gains a small piece of power not by physical or military dominance, or even through an election or replacement of a government. It is done by subtle craftiness and a behind the scenes operation. To the world he will appear to be all things good. Those without knowledge or understanding of prophecy will find no reason to not follow him and praise him for the peace that he will seem to bring to a troubled world. His position and accomplishments will be so great, that even Christians schooled in prophecy and the end times will be at risk of falling for his story:

*“And then if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ; or,*



lo, he is there; believe him not:

*For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall show signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.”*

Mk. 13:21-22

The kingdoms that embrace him are fooled and greatly underestimate his thirst for power. This charismatic leader will gain great acceptance throughout the world and the leaders of a league of 10 nations will believe that they can manipulate him. But they will be greatly mistaken. His charm and swashbuckling image will capture the imagination of the world. He will be a hero to the poor and needy; a champion to the working class. He will offer hope for those yearning for the new world order and to those waiting for the goodness of mankind to rid the world of its problems. He will redistribute the wealth of the nations and create an entirely new class of wealthy and influential followers to complement those who have conspired with him. In a very short time he will make much of the modern world beholden to him.

*“And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up.*

*And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people.*

*And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the*

*Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand.” Dan. 8:23-25*

These verses expose the heart of the man that is Antichrist. He gains power and control and then exercises his underlings with unbridled ambition. He will have a fierce countenance, understand dark sentences, and be ruthless and wise in the occult and in Satan’s ways. This is more like the Antichrist depicted at movie theaters for a night of entertainment. But when the world finally discovers what a formidable man he presents, it will be too late. His inventions to destroy and conquer will be captivating and awesome, piling up victory after victory. He will even be able to overcome God’s anointed people and will seem unstoppable, even by God.

Under his reign, deceit of a high spiritual nature will take place and lies and half truths will rule by his slick ways and velvet tongue. His own heart will tell him that he is the true God. He will be so persuasive and believable that people will put all of their faith in him. He will, however, be thoroughly deceitful and wicked in all of his intentions. He will believe that he can stand up to the Prince of princes, Jesus Himself. These accounts are recorded in Daniel to warn the faithful, who have put their lives in God’s hands, to not be deceived by this man and his spirit. Remember, Jesus Himself said that the deception at the end would be great.

### **They Worshipped the Beast**

As the Antichrist’s dominance of world governments and men

mounts, Satan sets the stage for the final act; the actual worship of the Antichrist as God:

*“And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?” Rev. 13:34*

Most Christians, even with the warnings found in the scriptures, will be caught off guard by this man. He will be like an angel of light and will have what appear to be religious remedies for every spiritual question or problem. Religion will be a big ally and tool used by him, as his real goal is total worship by the world as the one true God. Such will be his exploits, and they will reach new heights during the tribulation. As described in Revelation 13, the beast (Antichrist) is mortally wounded in the head and is healed and brought back to life by Satan. This false resurrection is the ultimate act played out by Satan, and it will result in much of the world believing that he is the one true God. The world will willingly, not ignorantly, worship the beast as such. This is the moment that Satan has waited for, and he will become one with the Antichrist.

**This is the Moment When The Antichrist Will Rise Up to Seize the Throne of God**

*“Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not*

*come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposes and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.” 2 Thess. 2:3-4*

**Now Satan and the Antichrist embark on the most vicious campaign ever devised against God**

*“And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.*

*And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.*

*If any man have an ear, let him hear.” Rev. 13:7-9*

Changing laws and times has religious implications here. He will make that which was holy profane, and that which was profane holy. He will set up his own religious days, rituals, and standards, and will challenge God to a final Showdown. His hatred and anger at God will have no bounds, and the world will gladly follow him. Anyone who continues to try to follow Jesus will be hunted down and executed.

Those who were unable to follow Jesus before the Tribulation, but who now see the truth for what it is, will have to die for Him or live with the prospect of eternal damnation. Many will choose the latter. In fact, most will. They will not have their names

written in the book of life. They will reject Jesus. And so we see here again, as we did in each letter to the seven churches at the start of Revelation, the spirit of God calling out to any who will hear: *“If any man have an ear, let him hear.”* Rev. 13:9

## 666 – The Number of a Man

And what of this popular number, one often bantered about by so many, with no understanding about its true meaning?

*“Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.”* Rev. 13:18

Probably no other aspect of end time prophecy has been maligned and used to satisfy the public’s thirst for supernatural hocus-pocus or far fetched horror stories than this number. This fits in with the world’s many misconceptions about the end times in general and the Antichrist in particular. There have been countless solutions to this puzzle: men with birthmarks on their foreheads; men whose name adds up to 666; men whose birth date adds up to 666; computer codes that depict 666. This goes on and on. The fact is that we do not know how this “number of a man” fits into the prophecy. There will be many more signs to look for to signify the end times, the tribulation, and the Antichrist’s rise to world prominence. Many we have already seen such as the formation of the nation of Israel. We wait in anticipation for a false peace to be forged with Israel and for the formation of the ten nation confederacy.

## Bottom Line –

God has assured us in His word, that the Antichrist and Satan will go down in defeat at the hands of Jesus and his army at Armageddon:

*“And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.*

*And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.” Rev 19:19-20*

We need to read the signs of the times and wait on the Lord:

*“And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.*

*But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the end is not by and by.” Luke 21:8-9*

### **END NOTE:**

*“And in his estate shall stand up a vile person, to whom they shall give the honor of the kingdom; but he shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries.” Dan. 11:21*

Gaining an understanding of the vile person, who and what he is, learning about his spirit and behavior, serves the end times Christian by issuing a warning about the Antichrist spirit.

Antichrist the man will be the embodiment and personification of a spirit that is already alive and well in the world today. It has infiltrated and become an integral part of today's politics, religions, governments, philosophies, societies and cultures. We study prophecy and the Antichrist's role in the end times so that we will not be seduced or overwhelmed with the Antichrist spirit, and miss the rapture.

Under his reign, deceit of a high spiritual nature will take place and lies and half truths will rule by his slick ways and velvet tongue. His own heart will tell him that he is the true God. He will be so persuasive and believable that people will put all of their faith in him. He will, however, be thoroughly deceitful and wicked in all of his intentions. He will believe that he can stand up to the Prince of princes, Jesus Himself. These accounts are recorded in Daniel to warn the faithful, who have put their lives in God's hands, to not be deceived by this man and his spirit. Remember, Jesus Himself said that the deception at the end would be great.

Most Christians, even with the warnings found in the scriptures, will be caught off guard by this man. He will be like an angel of light and will have what appear to be religious remedies for every spiritual question or problem. Religion will be a big ally and tool used by him, as his real goal is total worship by the world as the one true God.

PART II  
SATAN



## 18. Visits from Satan

In a series of brief articles EOE presents personal evidence and testimonies confirming Satan's strategies, deceptions and accusations against us. We intend the following spiritual vignettes as ways of educating the individual soul against the subtleties and craft of man's greatest enemy. We do not wish that these 'chapters' on this "Voices of Satan – Deceit" – page will frighten people, but rather arm them against so great a mortal enemy to their eternal life. We do not want to leave anyone with the impression that it is Satan alone who is responsible for our sin and the crimes against God and His love. We ourselves must take full responsibility. Though the Devil is often responsible for instigating us into a life of moral crimes by whispering fear, accusation, lust and selfishness into our ear.

It is not part of our agenda to frighten anyone either; only to give the believer the proper understanding so they will not fall prey to the Devil's tricks and devices. Satan is a great and powerful enemy. It is in every person's interest to engage him properly and wisely in mortal combat according to the advise of God given to us in His Word. ...

We begin with a Scripture. God's Word warns us to "*Be sober be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.*" 1 Peter 5:8 In the world, and sadly in a large part of so-called Christianity, we find that several erroneous stands on Satan have been developed by religious means and have become ingrained upon our minds and

souls so that they are accepted truths without ever even being questioned in our heart or mind.

1) The most prominent idea is that Satan does not exist at all, but is a “cartoon figure” something to joke about.

2) Another belief is that he exists in some benign form bland, impotent, and without any effect on man.

3) Then there is a segment of Christianity who becomes so obsessed with his presence that they conveniently charge every sin and evil thing to him. They do this rather than examining themselves to see if they have been lacking in any way, or if they may be the fountain of some evil or misdoing.

4) Others believe in something called “ultimate reconciliation”, the most blasphemous and unscriptural of all. This teaching is that even Satan and all his “fallen angels” or demons will at last repent and ultimately be saved too. This is convenient to a humanistic belief that no one is pure good or pure evil and that everyone is a little of both and therefore will be forgiven for anything they do because after all, who is perfect? This forgets that Jesus is perfect, did not sin and claims to be able to free us from sin. Don't ever bite on this humanism that is so popular in today's Church! Revelation 20:10 makes that very clear. *“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever.”*

It does not matter which deception one falls prey to; those who do not escape the clutches of Satan shall suffer, along with him, the very same fate of being totally remote from God and outcasts

from heaven. The purpose of this article is to share some of the personal encounters I, and others, have had with our enemy over the last four decades so the truth of his reality and how he works can be exposed. I do this that the faithful will not be deceived. These testimonies will instruct us that the Devil does in fact exist. It will demonstrate the kind of tricks he tries to pull, how to pray for discernment, while we are honest enough not blame every unpleasantness or sin on him alone, but to take ownership of our sin so that we may be delivered from doing harm against Christ and Man.

## 19. The Great Deceiver

### Visits from Satan

#### A Deceiver and Always a Liar

I still remember the first time I knew in my heart, he was real. Shortly after being born again, I watched Faust with Richard Burton, and the Lord gave me the revelation that the devil was truly a real being. Not long after that, I had a group of teenagers in my house overnight. They had gathered there to hear about my new experience with the Lord. I had been asleep a short time when I awakened with a start to find a grayish/white substance slithering across the floor of my bedroom. Of course, my first thought was that my house was on fire and the young people had probably done it by smoking. But very quickly God's own Spirit assured me it was only a ridiculous stunt by the enemy just to frighten me in hopes that I would give up sharing with these hungry young adults. I at once took authority over it in Jesus' name and the strange aberration immediately dissolved. I believe God allowed this supernatural incident to start my education in the ways of Lucifer.

Later, after reading a book called *The Challenging Counterfeit*, I realized the phenomenon I had seen was probably a form of ectoplasm, (often used in spiritualism) to manifest things.

## Old Scratch Proves to Be A Liar

My next encounter was a little longer and more dramatic. In 1974 my new husband and I had been taking every opportunity to bring his elderly mother to the saving knowledge of Jesus Christ. The three of us were on our way from Boston to visit my mother, who had been born-again a few years before at age 70, in Missouri. As we traveled I would attempt to read Scripture and Roy and I would discuss what it meant. Edith would rattle paper bags or rearrange her luggage, anything to keep from hearing the Word. We were discouraged and frustrated.

We laid over in a motel in Illinois and while the other two were asleep and I was just dropping off I was startled by a wicked and eerie cackling sound. It sounded like the Wicked Witch from the Wizard of Oz. I opened my eyes and there on the wall beside me was Old Scratch himself His FACE ONLY appeared. He looked like the most ugly, traditional satanic face you could image. He had a black goatee; a dark evil sheen covered his wrinkly skin while his creepy laugh worked its way through a mouth full of missing teeth. He cackled again and then spoke: "You will NEVER get her!"

I knew at once he meant my mother-in-Law. I rebuked him in the name of Jesus, as I had to the ectoplasm before, and he disappeared. As soon as we were alone the next morning I told Roy about it. As usual, the Devil proved to be a liar because at 77 my mother-in-law invited Jesus Christ into her life and lived three more years in the Lord until her 80th birthday. Those last few years of her life she was a woman delivered from many fears.

She went home to be with the Lord having great peace. Satan tried to discourage me into giving up on her but the Lord allowed me to have a big part in her coming to salvation.

### The Enemy Ever Lurking About

Sometime in the 1980's my daughter-In-law had grown a beautiful row of zinnias. I took a large number of pictures. I was going through them; very happy with how the photos came out. Then suddenly I discovered a strange whitish transparent mask in the midst of those lovely, brilliant colors. It was a very ugly, glum looking face, even trying to cover one side of a brilliant pink blossom. Rather quickly I realized our PERENNIAL ENEMY had somehow left one of his signatures to remind us he is always spying, lurking about. He will be until he is ... *“Cast into the bottomless pit, and shut up and a seal set upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled.”* Rev. 20:3

But the apostle John reminded the elect lady and her children that love will win out if we do not concede to falsehood, if we are not overcome by the deceiver.

*“And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, That, as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.*

*For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.*

*Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.*

*Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.” 2 John 6-9*

**Christ is the Truth!**

## 20. Arch Enemy of Woman

### Visits from Satan

A few years ago our fellowship became determined to spend more time in opening our meeting with praise. We also hoped we would be visited more powerfully by the Holy Ghost. We truly coveted the gifts of the Spirit as the Word exhorts us to do. Soon after initiating a more lengthy praise time we had three women utter prophecies in the same meeting. After a short utterance in tongues This interpretation came forth:

*“Come and stand before me in my presence, in the beauty of holiness and I will clothe you with righteousness, yea, even my righteousness, and joy and peace and power. Trust me! Fear not what the enemy can do to you, yes, in fact, he will harass you but trust me, trust me that I will keep your foot from falling, even though there may be trials. Just come unto me in the beauty of holiness and we shall fight the battle together. Thus saith the Lord”.*

Another woman started singing, “Bless the Lord Oh My Soul” and shortly afterward a second prophetess spoke these words: *“Prepare for the battle, be prepared, I give you the full armor. Don’t go out there unprepared. I am with you, I will be victorious. Put on the full suit I have given you. Go out there in faith, filled, knowing I will be with you and that I will be victorious”.*

A third woman then confirmed the words of prophecies of the



other two; *“I shall give you strength. You have no strength at all, but with me you have all the power.”*

The next morning I was awakened with a loud, threatening voice shouting: *“DAMN WOMAN!”* Not plural, women; but singular, woman. It was so loud and real I thought it came from the hall just outside my bedroom. I jumped up and ran to the hall to see who was there. As soon as I got to the stairway I realized it was just one more of Satan’s devices to harass God’s servants. I knew quickly that this fury of Satan was directed at women in general and was ages old. Genesis 3:15 records that God spoke to the “serpent” saying; *“And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and shalt bruise his heel.”*

He was outraged that three women had gotten spiritual gifts the night before. Yet his wrath wasn’t just about those three, but womankind who had brought forth the Savior of the world. That is why his anger was directed at the damn woman and not women.

## 21. The Bully of All Time

### Visits from Satan

#### Satan the Bully

In January 1996 a teenager in the family had been in trouble for some time. On the night of January 15, 1996 as I slept, once more I was visited by the “night stalker” of evil deeds. This time he told me if I would give up writing for the magazine and ministering at our meetings everything would be fine with that beloved family member. I knew he was a liar, and it made me furious he would even try such a thing. It only added to my already steadfast resolve to continue in the work God had given me. But Satan was not done trying to stop me. Three days later I was at the copy machine, in the area where I do most of my work. I turned to leave the machine and a “force” that is all I can describe it as shoved me off my feet! I went reeling, grabbing at the air and landed with a thud on my right shoulder. (I’m right handed). I have a picture of my slippers in front of the copier which shows I was lifted out of them. I began to cry out in pain. I couldn’t get up off the floor. My son and grandson came to my rescue and lifted me off the floor. I felt at once my shoulder had been dislocated. It was! One of my grandsons drove me to the hospital while a granddaughter held my arm up to relieve some of the pain. When he couldn’t scare me into quitting he disabled me. It was some

time before I could actually write again or use the computer – but I foiled his plan. I had plenty of other things to do, including witnessing to doctors and giving some of them the CS magazine. I never stopped ministering at our fellowship meetings, or any other opportunity I had when God opened some door. It took time before I was back to normal, but Satan never got the satisfaction of seeing me quit, and he never will see that day, unless the Lord tells me to stop, which I doubt will ever happen while I still have breath. The family member is better. (Now even a bona-fide born-again Christian.) So Satan was proven to be a liar even in the threat he made to me. He may be able to harass us, even harm us in some way, but we can't allow him and his evil spirits to stop us from the work God has called us to. We must be determined as Paul was when he said; *“I can do all things through Christ which strengthens me.”* Phil. 4:13 He also sets this example for us:

*“Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.”* Phil. 3:13-14.

There are many more personal incidents I could add here, but instead, I have chosen two visits experienced by family members. One was to a three-year-old and the other to a young man going off to college.

**Don't Play Around With “The Snake”**

This next account shows how relentless and evil the enemy of our body, soul and spirit is. A grandson of mine lived with us when he was not much more than a baby. He awoke suddenly, sat up with big wide eyes. (His mother reported this to me.) He said; “I saw a BIIIIIIIG SNAKE, it was a monster snake. Everybody was there, (He named a number of family members, mostly unbelievers.) He said no one could kill it, one even had a gun. (but it wouldn’t kill it). No one could, but his “uncle T could, he chased it away. His Uncle “T” happens to be the editor of this magazine. He had the authority in Jesus’ name to drive the enemy away.

We all knew who the BIG snake was that was harassing a three-year-old. He has not lived with or been near us for many years and is now a teenager. About three years ago Satan tried to claim his life with a physical snake. His friend, had a VERY SMALL pet snake, unlike the one in his dream, but poisonous, which he kept in an aquarium. He and his friends used to play with it. It bit my grandson’s index finger and it had to be amputated to the first Joint. But his life was spared. The moral to this story is to caution everyone not to play with Satan whether it is physical, intellectual or spiritual. He can be deadly.

More than that Satan is described in Scripture as a Roaring Lion going about to devour people. We need to trust God to defend us:

*“Cast all your care upon him; for he careth for you.*

*Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:*

*Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same*

*afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.*

*But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.” 1 Peter 5: 7-10*

## 22. He Will Continue – Resist!

### Visits from Satan

#### The Devil Keeps Trying

Once more I must report that the destroyer, that evil one, is active even in a house committed to the Lord. God's workman and His will are never entirely buffered from the Devil's wiles. He never rests from trying to find a weak link. We must be ever vigilant. When one of the young men in our home was going away to college to live on campus he had a personal visitation in the way of a threat. The great bully spoke to him and said; "Now that you are leaving this 'house of God', and are alone, you will be a target for me." Our enemy tried, but ultimately failed! That young man, has given his life to Jesus Christ, received the Baptism in the Holy Ghost, and been water baptized. He has had his battles with our private or public enemy NUMBER ONE, as we all have, but has confessed he wants to be "a man – a man of God." There are many more incidents I could record here, but I think the message is pretty clear. Satan is alive and active. He is an ancient being and a clever manipulator. He is referred to in God's Word as "an angel of light", "that old serpent the Devil", "your adversary", "the tempter" and other names. I will follow this report up with an in-depth study of what God's Word reveals to us about his nature

and tactics. We will see how to recognize his influence upon us, and how to “resist him so he will flee from us”.

*“Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.” James 4:7*

### Heed the Warnings about “The Enemy”

Chapter five of 1 Peter is addressed to the elders and goes on to exhort them to feed the flock of God, not to be lords over them but to be examples to them. The younger are to submit to the elders, yet we should all be subject one to another, and clothed with humility; to humble ourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt us in due time, and to cast all our cares upon Him. Then we have this warning about our greatest foe. We are given some instruction and a reminder, and then we are encouraged and given a blessing of hope. I believe these are some of the duties of the elders, to make sure the flock wherever they dwell, should be cautioned about the reality of our great enemy, until God puts the final end to his corruption of the universe.

*“Be sober, be Vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.*

*Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in the brethren that are in the world.*

*But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.*

To Him be glory and dominion forever and ever. AMEN". 1 Pet  
5:8-11



## 23. You Must be Freed From Occult Past

From such as: ESP, Séance, Telepathy, Hypnotism, Fortune-telling, Water Witching, Magic, Ouija Board, New Age, Street & prescribed Psychiatric Mind Drugs, Tarot Cards, Astrology and other forms of idolatry and witchcraft.

What is Occultism? Stated concisely, it is participation or involvement in any way with fortune-telling, magic practices, spiritism, or false religious cults and teachings.

### **Occult Bondage and Oppression**

The Scriptures warn that there will be a great increase in occult activity in the last days: *“Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.”* 1 Tim 4:1

There has never been a time in history when the warnings against the dangers of occultism were more necessary than in the present. Multitudes of people, Christian and non-Christian alike, find themselves suffering physical, mental, psychic and spiritual oppressions, few realizing that it is because they have allowed themselves to become ensnared in the diabolical web of occultism, which is under the influence and control of the powers of darkness.

## Vital Questions to Consider

If you have ever been involved in any way in the following occult practices, whether done innocently or not, are you aware that the Scriptures condemn such practices without reservation and that you have opened the door to oppression or bondage to the powers of darkness?

Have you ever visited a fortune-teller?

Has anyone read your palm or told your fortune by the use of cards, tea leaves, crystal ball, Ouija board, or other means?

Have you consulted the Ouija board (out of curiosity or in earnest), or played with the popular occult games being sold today: ESP, Telepathy, Kabbala, Horoscope, Clairvoyant, Voodoo, New Age and so on?

Divining for water, oil, minerals, underground sewer and water lines, by using a forked stick or other objects, is an ancient occult practice known as “water witching” or “dowsing”. Have you, or has anyone for you, engaged in this?

Have you at any time consulted a medium, or anyone with psychic or clairvoyant powers?

Have you attended a séance or spiritualist meeting, or attempted to communicate with the dead or so called spirit “guides”?

Have you practiced or experimented with ESP., Telepathy, automatic writing, table-tipping, levitation of objects, yoga, PK, remote influence or the subconscious mind of others, or self-hypnosis?

Have you been hypnotized?

When ill, have you sought (or were you subjected to as a child) treatment of healing or diseases, burns, sickness, wart removal, etc., through magic charming, powwow, Spiritualism, Christian Science, or by anyone who practiced psychic, spirit or metaphysical healing, or who used hypnosis, the pendulum, or trance for diagnosis or treatment?

Do you read the horoscope columns or follow astrology? Do you read or possess occult literature? (books on ESP, reincarnation, dreams, fortune-telling, astrology, metaphysics, self-realization, magic, clairvoyance, hypnosis, yoga, handwriting analysis, religious cults, or works by such authors as Edgar Cayce, Jeane Dixon, Arthur Ford, or Ruth Montgomery).

Have you ever attended meetings or assented to the teachings of Satanists, the Rosicrucians, Spiritualists, Mormons, Christian Scientists, Unity, Baha'i, Theosophy, Inner Peace Movement, Spiritual Frontiers Fellowship, Association for Research and Enlightenment, Religious Research Foundation of America, Unitarians, Jehovah's Witnesses, or others of an occult nature?

Do you know that all such occult practices are condemned by God in the Scriptures, being an abomination unto Him and are under His curse? Are you aware that anyone who has ever practiced or participated in any form of occultism (whether done innocently or not) has opened the door to oppression by the powers of darkness, even though such occult activity may have occurred many years ago or before you became a Christian? You may even now be the victim of occult bondage and oppression

because of this and unaware of the source and cause of your problems, whether physical, mental, psychic, spiritual, marital or other.

### **Occult Involvement is Disobedient to God's Word**

All forms of fortune-telling, spiritualism, magic practices, and involvement in the cults and their teachings are absolutely forbidden by the Scriptures: ... thou shall not learn to do after the abomination of those nations. There shall not be found with thee any one... that uses divination (fortune-telling), or an observer of times (soothsayer), or an enchanter (magician), or a witch (sorceress), or a charmer (hypnotist), or a consulter with familiar spirits (medium possessed with a spirit "guide"), or a wizard Tarot Cards (clairvoyant or psychic), or a necromancer (medium who consults the dead). For all that do these things are an ABOMINATION unto the Lord! (Deut. 18:9-12)

The Scriptures condemn all forms of occultism as sorcery and warn that "*... they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God*" (Gal. 5:19-21), but "*... are an abomination unto the Lord*" (Deut. 18:12), and "*... shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone*" (Rev. 21:8). From earliest times God forbade occultism as spiritually defiling (Lev. 19:31), and made participation in it punishable by death (Ex. 22:18; Lev. 20:27), and cause for rejection of that soul by God (Lev. 20:6). (See also: Ex. 7:11-12 with 2 Tim. 3:8; Ex. 22:18; Lev. 19:26, 31; 20:6; 1 Sam.

15:23; 28:3; 2 Kgs. 21:5-6; 2 Chron. 33:6; Isa. 2:6; 8:19; Jer. 27:9-10; Zech. 10:2; Mal. 3:5; Acts 8:9; 16:16; 19:19; 1 Tim. 4:1.)

### **Occult Involvement Invokes a Curse**

There are but two sources of hidden information and knowledge, or supernatural help, guidance and healing – God or Satan. One may, through prayer in Jesus' Name, seek such help from God; but there is another way to obtain the desired guidance or help – occultism. Behind this door stand Satan and the powers of darkness who work through the occult media of fortune-telling, magic, spiritism, and false religious cults. The Scriptures forbid man to seek help from or contact with these sources, for it is tantamount to calling upon another god (Ex. 20:3-5). Satan is called the “god of this world” (2 Cor. 4:4). Although Satan often accommodates the victim with hidden knowledge or help through these sources, this individual has opened a door of access to him and becomes prey to the forces of darkness to oppress in many ways.

The seriousness of occult participation is seen in the judgment of God which fell upon King Saul who died for seeking help from a medium. Read 1 Samuel 28 and 1 Chronicles 10:13-14.

### **CHARACTERISTICS OF OCCULT OPPRESSION AND SUBJECTION**

The following are a few of the evidences of occult oppression or bondage, although some of these symptoms may stem from other causes. Usually when one or more of these manifestations are present, it is an indication of the presence and activity of demonic spirits, as well as the need of deliverance.

Prolonged depression or gloominess; indifference; irresponsibility; unpredictable behavior; delusions; uncontrollable passions and appetites; sexual perversions; enslavement to drugs, alcohol, or tobacco; compulsive eating; uncontrollable temper, hate, or other psychopathic tendencies.

Chronic fear or anxieties; nervousness or neurotic behavior; feelings of inadequacy or self-pity; abnormal desire for attention; extremely negative personality; compulsions (lying, stealing, gambling) or obsessions (fear of dying; acute jealousy); thought of self-destruction.

Psychic experiences; possession of psychic or extrasensory powers (none of which are to be confused with genuine gifts of the Holy Spirit); psychic oppression (seeing apparitions; hearing voices; poltergeist phenomena, etc.).

Indifference to spiritual things, the Scriptures or prayer; chronic doubts and difficulty in exercising faith; unscriptural religious beliefs or practices; inability to receive Christ of the Holy Spirit; hatred of the blood Atonement; blasphemous thoughts against God.

Abnormal talkativeness or loudness; muttering to oneself; shunning others; unkempt appearance; abnormally bright or glazed eyes; sullen, perverse or defiant facial expression.

## METHOD OF LIBERATION FROM OCCULT OPPRESSION

If the oppressed are to be set free, some Christians must rid themselves of the naive and unscriptural notion that believers cannot be oppressed by Satan. On the contrary, many have been oppressed, vexed, depressed, deceived, bound and afflicted, especially when there has been any occult involvement, whether before or after conversion.

(See Job 1-2; Lk. 13:11; 22:31-31; 2 Cor. 12:7; 1 Thess. 2:18; 1 Tim. 4:1; 1 Pet. 5:8-9; Eph. 6:11-12).

1) Confession of faith in Christ. Without such a confession, there can be no permanent liberation, for where no sincere commitment to Christ is made there is no secure basis for such individuals to make continued resistance to the powers of darkness.

2) Confession of occult activity. All occult involvement must be recognized as disobedience to God, repudiated, and confessed as evil and unholy. The oppressed should name each form of occult participation that can be recalled (such as visiting fortune tellers, playing with Ouija board, following astrology, etc.), confessing it as sin, and asking forgiveness in Jesus' Name. It is well to ask pardon also for any occult involvement you may have forgotten.

3) Renunciation of Satan and command to depart. This is not to be a prayer request, but a direct command to Satan himself by the person seeking deliverance. At this point, Satan will only heed a command to depart (at least permanently) from the individual who granted him access in the first place through occult

involvement. In faith, renounce him and all his work in your life and command him to depart in Jesus' Name!

In exceptional cases where oppression is severe and faith is weak, it may be advisable to have another exorcise these powers of darkness after the first 3 steps have been taken on the part of the oppressed.

Accept the fact of your liberation by faith. Do not rely on "feelings" or "appearances" at this point. Stand on the Word of God – the evidence and assurance will follow. Satan knows he must release his victim when commanded to do so in Jesus' Name, but this does not mean the evidence is always seen immediately. Boldly confess your deliverance by faith and "*resist the devil and he will flee from you*" (James. 4:7).



## 24. The Satanic Shell Game

### Do Not Be Tricked By His Devices

Even though they may never have played it nor gotten personally involved in it, most people are familiar with the idea behind the simple and seductive, infamous shell game. “The hand is quicker than the eye.” This crude, but correct, proverb is tested by trying to locate the small object hidden under one of three inverted cups or half-shells. The game’s manipulator swiftly, deftly skids the covering cups back and forth, round and around, on a smooth felt surface. After just a few furious gyrations the concealed object seems to disappear faster than a skillfully shot eight ball dives into the side pocket of a pool table. Or does it disappear? The bettor is convinced that amidst all the scrambling and shuffling his eagle-sharp eye has not lost the designated object. Whether concealed fairly or by trickery, the gambler is usually wrong in selecting one of the three shells. All the certainty in the world won’t restore to him the money he has already laid down, but his real ignorance and deep stubbornness will probably provoke him to try again. The “mark” has strong, persistent faith in his own natural powers and abilities which, being translated into spiritual terms, means he is really living on hope. The more he tries, the greater the chances that his keen judgment will find the right combination. He’s convinced that he’ll eventually

uncover the hidden object; he'll make the killing his heart desires; and, he'll be vindicated in his own if not in the eyes of others!

Unless they had scads of money to throw away and oodles of time to waste, most people would be offended at the suggestion that they could be continuously duped by the brazen deception of the shell game. Why it doesn't even merit the dubious finesse of "the pyramid club", let alone the subtle strategy of a "sting" or con game. Yet, many otherwise sophisticated people whose lives, for the most part, are regulated by good judgment and common sense, are completely unaware of the slickest scam of all. What I'm talking about isn't a puny sport for low stakes played at some carnival barker's booth or on a portable table at the street corner of some sleazy section of a big city. The satanic shell game is played out in the open, on the world's stage, for all to see and participate in. And this deadly drama is performed for the highest stakes of all – the souls of men! This supernatural venture has all the simplicity of the shell game. Like its worldly counterpart, three standard but important items are involved in its cleverly devious operation: people, places and things. Like an experienced, confident showman the Enemy of our Soul plays right into the innate ignorance and stubbornness of our inherited Adamic nature. Combined with cocky self-assurance and persuaded by parents, friends, church and school alike that hope is really the highest spiritual attainment – "Well, all we can do is hope for the best" – we are as ready to be satanically plucked as any unsuspecting spring chicken. With natural hope alone (aka presumption) and no real supernatural faith as the foundation for

our daily living, we're as ready as any rustic, straw-sucking rube to be taken in by Satan, the most crooked "city slicker" of all time. And his modus operandi is basically just as unassuming and confidently successful as that of the shell-game operator.

He spiritually manages to move around the three most important and influential spheres of relationships in our lives: the people we love and care about; the places we like the best and where we spend the most time; and the things we seek to acquire and maintain – all those possessions and material blessings we treasure the most. The silent, but most persuasive and generally successful satanic scam involves once again, like the shell-game, at least our implicit cooperation. What the Enemy insinuates and what we sell ourselves on is that in life we just have to "hang in there" and "keep on hoping". Someday, he snidely suggests, we really will get it all together. One fine, unforeseeable day, we will finally be surrounded by the perfect people of our own choosing. With the best possible personal support and encouragement we'll find ourselves in that ideal location that we've always longed to enjoy. And, ultimately, we'll be fully secure with just the right amount of money and material comforts to make our life as complete and satisfying as possible. This natural nirvana is not just the product of an overactive imagination. Whether conscious or not, it is the apparently realistic and very attainable goal toward which multiplied millions are aspiring. Some would call it fate, kismet, or karma but like the stupefied game player, the hopeful hanger-on to the wheel of fortune is only one third, or, at the most, two-thirds successful. He's with the right people in the

proper place but everything is spoiled by that serious lack of cash flow. Or, he may have plenty of money and possessions with satisfying relationships but he simply cannot abide his surroundings, whether it be the hell-hole of his workplace or simply the dismal, depressing weather conditions of his chosen region. Well, maybe now it's retirement time. He's got enough money; he has picked the right spot, but, wouldn't you know, the people he now has to live and associate with are absolutely intolerable! As one lesser known television commentator puts it, "And so it goes!" Over the centuries songs have been sung about it, from the bellowing agonies of the opera hero to the biting bitterness of some modern ballads.

Dramatic presentations have acted it out and reams of stories have been written about it, from the insolent, self-destructive fool name Nabal described in the Bible to the most pathetic innocent victim of a senseless crime reported in yesterday's newspaper. Poets and philosophers have deeply lamented it and sensitive souls have wept oceans of tears because of it. Yet mankind in general has yet to concede that life in the natural is basically tragic!

It is even less commonly admitted that without supernatural faith in the living God who requires us to receive His one and only Savior – that deficiency places us in deep trouble and, even worse, eternal jeopardy! How few still realize that without the whole new nature and life the Lord Jesus has won for us, we are in desperate danger of being taken in by the satanic shell-game. Whether pope, president, premier, lowly peasant or every other

kind or condition of mankind in between, the natural life, no matter how apparently successful, potentially hopeful or temporarily satisfying, is nothing more or less than what God's Word says it is. *"That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world"*. Ephesians 2:12

I'm sure that it was one of New England's foremost sages who once remarked that most men live lives of quiet desperation. Like most philosophers whose main art is to make a big deal out of nothing, this one got it part way right. Thoreau was expressing the tenor of his times – the dismal prospects for daily life caused by the new industrialism. Had he lived through to "the gay nineties" he might have whistled a more cheerful tune. As it was, he taught a pattern of behavior that did little to aid his own and has helped to foul future generations. In effect his plan called for focus on self-realization, dropping out of conventional society, and then establishing himself as a detached social perfectionist. One who more or less "takes great pains and gives them to other people."

The truth of the matter is that if we refuse to accept or remain ignorant of God's plan of salvation we'll stay caught in the vortex of a vicious cycle of alternating hopes for self-improvement and social harmony countered by the awful despair consequent upon destructive selfishness and unconquerable sin! Opposed to the confusing contradictions put forth by the Satanic shell game is the stable, reliable security of God's truth. A spiritual life of

supernatural faith doesn't take us out of this world nor does it destroy all at once the cheap and tawdry deceptions of our own hearts. But, by believing God's Holy Word; by real, living faith in Jesus as our Savior and Lord, we are spiritually and actually, *"delivered from the power of darkness, and ... translated ... into the kingdom of his dear Son"* (see Colossians 1:13). That Kingdom, though invisible, is quite authentic and so very powerful that Satan, with all his tricks and all his devices, cannot prevail against it (see Matt. 16:18). And God's Kingdom has a solid, unvarying simplicity about it that redeems the three essential, relational components of this earthly life. The nearest thing to and the actual foretaste of paradise in this life is God's spiritual domain, established by the Lord Jesus who is the Way, the Truth and the Life (see John 14:6). Because of, and through Him, the Kingdom of God is made manifest, and entering into His spiritual commonwealth we become God's people, in God's place, under God's rule. On our own we'd never have "the smarts" to outwit Satan, but secure in our faith and trust in the Savior we are spared the frustrations of the Satanic shell game. The people, places and things in our daily lives become most meaningful, enduringly productive and eminently satisfying because now they are God-chosen, God-protected and God-controlled.

## 25. The Act of Denial

### THE ACT OF LYING TO OURSELVES

In my walk as a Christian I have discovered deliverance is an on-going experience. As human beings we are resistant to change because it brings the anxiety of being in unfamiliar territory. As a result, most Christians resist when the Lord tries to deliver us from an emotion or feeling we are at home with. When these things are destructive we may even deny their existence in an effort to keep them hidden or to resist a change the Lord wants us to make. In resisting, we often deny these characteristics to the Lord, to others, and often to ourselves. We may become so good at it that we can mask our true feelings on the surface and appear as though everything is just fine. But in our spirit, in the depths of our soul we can't hide it. This problem may fester and eat at us until it is compounded and will not be resolved until we have a crisis.

Don't resist Jesus' gentle urging when he wants to deliver us from something undesirable. It may be familiar or comfortable in the short run but in the long run it will only hinder us and bind us up. This action could block us from receiving all the gifts God has to offer us. Obedience to Jesus is desirable and saves us a lot of pain down the road. Deliverance is never easy, but it is easier when we take Jesus' word the first time instead of waiting for a crisis to occur. Denial does not protect us from the truth, it only

keeps us lying to ourselves and ultimately in the dark. A few Scriptures:

*“That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.*

*Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbor: for we are members one of another.” Eph. 4:22-25*

*“And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him:*

*For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.*

*If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?” Heb. 12:5-7*

*“Now no chastening for the present seemeth joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.” Heb. 12:11*



## 26. The Gibeonite Ruse

### A Problem of Deceit and Guile (1450bc)

The prophet Zechariah asks a question that is forever pertinent to all spiritual considerations and decisions: “*For who hath despised the day of small things?*” Zech: 4:10

The Gibeonites were a very shrewd bunch of people. You can read about them for yourself in the Book of Joshua, chapters nine and ten. A brief, but important, reference to the Gibeonites can also be found in 2 Samuel 21:1-14. I don't know a great deal about this particular segment of those biblical people called the Hittites. All I do know is that they do hold a solid place in world history and one of their offshoots or branches were the Gibeonites. Their special, if dishonest, dealings with the leaders of Israel gained them notoriety that most of the tribes and clans of the ancient Mid-East never attained. The Gibeonites have the dubious distinction of having duped Joshua and the elders of Israel. To all appearances, it seems that they got away with it.

At the time the Israelites under Joshua invaded the Promised Land of Canaan, most of the inhabitants rose up in arms against them. The Gibeonites decided on a different strategy. Instead of warfare and bloodshed, their weapons were guile and deceit. The Gibeonites actually lived only a few miles from Jericho, the Twelve Tribes' designated entry point to Palestine. These cagey enemies of God's people were destined to be destroyed, so they

devised a simple, but clever scheme to deceive Israel in the hope of saving their own necks. Hearing that Joshua was camped in their general neighborhood, after his devastating defeat of the strategic cities of Jericho and Ai, the Gibeonites sent a delegation to him at nearby Gilgal. Their representatives were not up front with the Israeli leaders. They didn't present themselves in a truthful light saying that they were neighbors who respected Israel's strength and godly advantage and were suing for peace. Instead, they told a story that either ignored the truth completely or, at least, shaded the truth in such a way that it was full of guile and deceit. The Gibeonites presented themselves to the invading Israelites, not as nearby neighbors, but as distant foreigners who lived in a far-off land. They made their dust-covered clothes to look worn and ragged as if they had been on the road for many days, even months. They handed their enemies hard, stale, moldy bread and told them it had been freshly baked when they left home. Even their empty wine skins were completely dried up and cracked. All they wanted, they said, was a peace treaty with Israel; then they would return to their distant home. If, in the event the Israelis ever came their way, they would be servants to the people of Israel. The Gibeonites merely asked for a mutual help pact that would guarantee not only mercy and aid from Israel, but protection from their common enemies.

For a relatively small group the Gibeonites drove a hard bargain and soon it was a done deal. For unknown reasons, Joshua and the elders of Israel quickly bit on this proposal. Without checking out their story; without surveying the geographical situation;

most of all, without consulting the Lord and waiting for His guidance, Joshua went impulsively ahead and signed a binding, lasting agreement with the Gibeonites. Only after three days did they discover that their “far-distant” allies were really next-door neighbors! Only when the Gibeonites were under siege from a common enemy and were calling in the marker on their mutual aid treaty did the Israelites turn to God for counsel and advice. The Lord told them they had made a commitment to these people and they had to stand by it.

Deep and long lasting trouble for both parties – both the Israelites and the Gibeonites – was the fruit of this clever, but calamitous deception. The Gibeonites deceived Israel, but God’s people had really deceived themselves. On the mammoth scene of world history this minor alliance would rank as a minute encounter. In the economy of God’s providence, however, such tiny events often matter much. The prophet Zechariah asks a question that is forever pertinent to all spiritual considerations and decisions: “*For who hath despised the day of small things?*” (4:10). For the Gibeonites, their wily guile and deception gained them survival and nothing more. God spared them as a people, but His nation condemned them to endless servitude. The Gibeonites remained enemies and aliens to the household of God forever after. Each generation had to live out its days as “*hewers of wood and carriers of water*”. The Gibeonites achieved their short term goal – survival; but they paid a terribly long term price for it – virtual slavery!

## Israel Plagued By Allowing The Deception

We don't hear much of the Gibeonites again until the reign of King Saul. From the time of Joshua, throughout the long period of the Judges, the very presence of these deceitful people had not only been a thorn in the side of the Israelis; their position in the land was a dividing wedge that separated southern Judah from the rest of the Kingdom. Saul, Israel's first king thought he knew better than God. If the Gibeonites brought guile and deceit into the land; it was Saul who set the example for deep and devastating delusion. Completely ignoring God's explicit command to spare the Gibeonites, Saul decreed it was time to remove them completely by exterminating them.

The Bible barely alludes to the king's mad scheme, but we know that Saul's plot miserably failed. By deluding himself that he could solve any problem; by presuming that the end justifies the means; by deliberately countermanding clear and specific orders from the Most High God; Saul not only failed to remove an evil people from the land, he also guaranteed the ultimate destruction of his own family. King Saul exhibited that hubris, that overweening pride in his own decisions and that unfounded confidence in his own good judgment that he brought certain and lasting disaster upon his own dynasty.

The Bible tells us that after Saul's death God sent a famine into the land mainly to get the attention of Saul's successor, King David. When this righteous ruler turned to God, the Lord showed him that arrogant error of his predecessor. Once again, God's

anointed was compelled to humble himself and his nation before a delegation of these servile Gibeonites. Their deceit, Israel's lack of vigilance and Saul's deep delusion caused God's people centuries of grief and embarrassment. For all his misguided efforts and pains, Saul reaped the fruits of his delusion. In their poverty and slavery the bowed but ever proud Gibeonites refused financial and other forms of compensation for the attempted genocide on their tribe. Instead, the Gibeonites demanded the execution of seven of Saul's sons. King David was compelled to hand over his own people to the power of Israel's ongoing enemies.

The world's arsenal is growing daily in material strength and sophisticated intimidation. Those who believe that they can outsmart, outflank or in any way outmaneuver our Enemy through cerebral strategies are doomed to the slavery and destruction heaped upon Saul and the Gibeonites. Spiritual virtues and qualities are largely unseen yet are more real and potent in lasting effects than the most formidable nuclear pile. Throughout the Scriptures warnings of spiritual dangers are signaled by the flashcards of attention getting words like: "Take heed" or "Consider". Over the years I've urged our Fellowship to check out, investigate and take to heart such biblical alarms. When asked about the time of the end; when questioned about the signs that would precede His Second Coming, our blessed Lord instinctively cautioned:

*"Take heed that no man deceive you." & "Take heed that you be not deceived." Matt 24:4/Mk 13:5/Lk 21:8.*

Deceit and delusion are powerful spiritual weapons of destruction but they pale in potency compared to the creative and edifying Word of God come alive by faith in believers' hearts!

*“Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord? or who shall stand in his holy place?*

*He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.*

*He shall receive the blessing from the Lord, and righteousness from the God of his salvation.” Ps 24:3-5*

## 27. Battle Against Envy & Jealousy

### The Story of the Patriarch Joseph

*“But as for you, ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save much people alive.”* Genesis 50:20

A neat little devotional book that my wife gave me for Fathers' Day contains a very telling commentary on verse 30 of the 14th chapter of the book of Proverbs: *“A sound heart is the life of the flesh: but envy the rottenness of the bones.”* “Envy is like a cancer”, the commentary states. “It starts small, but it spreads quickly, and it is extremely destructive. It causes us to be dissatisfied with ourselves the way God created us to be. It says that we think we deserve more than we really have. It is a form of selfishness which causes us to be less than we should be. When we conquer envy in our lives, then we grow strong and sound and we have God's favor. It is good for us to learn to be happy with ourselves and the things we have. It is better to thank the Lord for our many blessings than to curse Him for the things we feel cheated without.”

As we read chapters 37 through 50 in the book of Genesis it becomes obvious that Joseph, the next to the youngest son of Jacob, was mightily blessed and favored by the Lord. God gave Joseph special dreams and signs about his personal destiny. God granted Joseph the great grace of adaptability even in the most

adverse and difficult of circumstances. This special person was gifted with such wisdom and insight that he not only correctly interpreted crucial dreams but he dealt honestly and openly in all contingencies. Joseph was elevated to the second highest position in all Egypt; yet, he ever remained a dutiful son, respectful to his aging father and a tenderhearted brother. He favored his younger brother, Benjamin, but he also lovingly forgave his older brothers who first conspired to murder him and then settled on selling their own flesh and blood into slavery.

### Envy of the Patriarchs

A very low point in the CONFLICT OF THE AGES came when “... *the patriarchs, moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt*”. Acts 7:9 But envy and jealousy are not confined to Old Testament times. In his epistle to the early Christians, James the Apostle solemnly warns: “*If ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not and lie not against the truth... Where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.*” James 3:14-16 In the earliest chapters of Genesis Cain envies his brother Abel’s acceptance from God and ruthlessly murders him. Abimelech, jealous of the favor shown Abraham, drives this “friend of God” out of the land. Korah and On resent Moses’ leadership and rebel against the one to whom God spoke “face to face”. Haman is exalted in wealth, title and power in the Median Empire. His envy of Mordecai, a lowly, righteous Jew, brings disaster on himself and his whole dynasty. Psalm 73, verse 3 seriously warns the righteous about



envying the foolish or the prosperity of the wicked. The presidents and princes of Persia despised and envied the prophet Daniel. They plotted to discredit and do away with him. The eighteenth verse of the 27th chapter of Matthew's Gospel reveals that the chief priests and elders handed Jesus over to Pontius Pilate for crucifixion because of envy. Envy was the motive behind the persecution heaped on Paul and Barnabas by the Jews of Pisidian Antioch. (Acts 13:45)

It is a very sad, but certain, critique of the basic depravity of human nature that God's concern for and kindness toward an individual can, and often does, result in hatred for, insane jealousy of, bitter envying of, persecution, rejection and even physical violence against that favored person. Psalm 63:3 states "*...Thy loving kindness is better than life.*" The patriarch Joseph believed on and acted on that important biblical truth in every situation all the days of his fruitful life. Joseph knew in the very fiber of his being that God was with him and was looking after him, so the circumstances of his life mattered very little to him. Joseph kept his eyes on God, not on others. He measured his own righteousness by what God revealed to him about himself and not by what others thought of him. Joseph was immersed in God, the things of God and in the love of his neighbor. Like the apostle Paul, his successor in the far distant future, the patriarch Joseph could affirm: "*For we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves; but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves are not wise.*" 2 Cor 10:12 Secure in his

relationship with God and with such a truthful, humble attitude there is no room for envy of any kind in the true saint of God.

### Envy and Jealousy Corrupt

Both from the account of Joseph and his brethren and from the other scriptural incidents already referred to, we can see that envy is a major force in THE CONFLICT OF THE AGES. Satan arouses and incites envy and jealousy wherever there is an opening. The Adversary knows full well that envy is a most powerful spiritual weapon to use against the seed of the woman. Envy always brings about corruption; frequently, it also causes destruction. The spirits of contention and competitiveness, so deeply entrenched in our families and in society at large, belie the profoundly naive notion that most of us have no problem at all with envy or jealousy. In style, fashion, commerce and sports contention and competition are so much a part of the everyday game that few are even aware that they are engaging in these acts. Galatians 5:15 sternly warns: *“But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.”* We have reached a place in our modern society where the “biting and devouring” are not only permitted and tolerated, a general sense of insecurity and paranoia combined with a particular spirit of contention and competition has encouraged and validated a kind of personal ruthlessness that has long since overstepped the bounds of law, religion and family trust.

The merciless lack of concern Joseph’s brethren demonstrated

toward their helpless younger brother is now epidemic in our land and around the world. Personal ruthlessness has been preached not only from our church pulpits and academic lecterns but has been almost systematically promoted and practiced in our business board rooms, our legal courtrooms, our family dining rooms and, most sadly, even in our private bedrooms. As far as social and personal relationships are concerned, we have sown the wind and we are already beginning to reap the whirlwind Hosea 8:7! As the prophet Jonah ruefully learned: *“They that observe lying vanities forsake their own mercy”* Jonah 2:8. Many of us have spent so many years *“observing lying vanities”* practicing our man-made or self-made religions and upholding ethnic and family traditions – that *“vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers”* (as the apostle Peter puts it) we are not even conscious that the *“bitter envying and strife”* that James refers to is so deeply lodged in our hearts.

None of us can roll back the hands of time. Neither can we reverse the trends of this present era when *“evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived”* 2 Tim. 3:13. But those of us who have a story and a song about praising our Savior all the day long can surely take to heart the revealing story about Joseph and his brethren. From it we can gain deeper insight into THE CONFLICT OF THE AGES. We can also more fully appreciate the dire consequences that result from jealousy. We can more clearly understand that the personal and general struggle against envy is, in all reality, one of the most serious, yet satisfying BATTLES OF THE LORD.

Preachers sometimes paraphrase our opening Scripture citation. They state Joseph's reassuring words to his deceitful, fearful brothers as "Satan meant it for evil, but God turned it to good." Whatever "lying vanities"; however so many "lies against the truth" have been a part of our personal lives, the following statements and questions regarding both our words and works can be both a comfort and a challenge:

*"Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be.*

*Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter?*

*Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? Either a vine, figs? So can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh.*

*Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? Let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom."* James 3:10-13

## 28. Perverting The Seed

### Fallout From Spirit of Polygamy (3900bc)

We want to introduce our readers to Lamech; not the Lamech who was the father of Noah, but rather the earlier Lamech: the man who instituted the practice of polygamy – the taking of more than one wife. This Lamech was the direct descendant of Adam and Eve’s son, Cain: that rebel against God and man who inaugurated the practice of murder! With his two wives, Adah and Zillah, Lamech produced three sons and a daughter. His offspring seem to have brought primitive civilization to new heights of human ingenuity, material convenience and worldly success. In chapter four of the book of Genesis, verses 16-26, we have all the information we need to know about the condemned successors of Cain, the one marked for protection but presented as an example of ultimate destruction. The revelations in these few verses are powerful warnings concerning the final fate prepared for all those who continue in rebellion against God. Lamech’s sons and daughter might well have achieved temporary fame and transient notoriety but the Bible records that with their deaths all their works, all their achievements and impressive accomplishments were completely cut off. The Almighty’s attitude toward unrepentant wickedness is clearly, irreversibly stated: “*Let his posterity be cut off; and in the generation following*

*let their name be blotted out...that He may cut off the memory of them from the earth.” Psalm 109:13,15*

Lamech, the seventh from Adam in the line of Cain, is the last progenitor of that wicked, arrogant, rebellious series of humans. The sons of Lamech produce no seed to carry on their father's name. His one daughter bears no offspring to insure the perpetuity of his honored memory. God had made it clear to Adam and Eve that they were created to be one flesh. The Almighty also rebuked Adam for hearkening to his wife's voice instead of obeying the word of the Lord. Lamech knew of these primal confrontations between God and man. He also heard of the curse upon Cain and saw the continuing calamities contingent upon a stubborn spirit of defiance. In spite of such knowledge and experience, Lamech took unto himself two wives, arrogantly ordering them to heed his voice while he ignored God's explicit commands. Rather than learning from the grievous sin of Cain, his ancestor, Lamech haughtily boasted of his right to murder anyone who might dare to wound him. Moreover, he mocked God's promise of punishment and bragged of his own vow of vendetta: a seventy-fold vengeance on all his adversaries. Cain had started something by brutally bludgeoning the life out of his innocent brother, Abel. He wandered as an exile but eventually founded a city. Like so many after him, Cain sought his salvation in humanism. Walled defenses close human ties, pacts and agreements of mutual protection, alliances for common preservation seemed to him the secure way to go. Cain's direct descendants carried on and embellished this apparent formula

for prosperity and success. The humanistic program reached a pinnacle with Lamech, his two wives, his four children, his boastful self-reliance and his bitter defiance of his Maker. Satan had had a field day with this doomed dynasty. Urged on by demonic forces, Cain and his crew exalted the human spirit to spectacular heights of achievement. But what Cain had started God finished and the whole rebellious line, the whole wobbly house caved in and came crashing down. It was more real than the famed “Fall of the House of Usher”, for the house of Cain ended not with a bang but with a whimper. The proverbial biblical expression, “the way of Cain” has become a synonym for that deep-seated rebelliousness that ends in woeful desolation; that merits complete and utter destruction.

#### **CORRUPTION:**

The practice of polygamy, while it started with Lamech, was by no means confined to his generation. Once introduced, evil ideas and practices have a way of propagating themselves. Even the revered patriarchs succumbed to this social convention of having more than one wife. God merely tolerated it, but polygamy still produced its ruinous effects. Another pinnacle of perversity was sadly surmounted during the reign of King Solomon, the son of David. Like his remote ancestor, Lamech, this flamboyant monarch accumulated, not just a couple of wives, but boasted the seemingly outlandish sum of one thousand wives and concubines! It wasn't just his immediate progeny who were affected, but the whole sacred dynasty of David with God's personal promises attached to it, were endangered by Solomon's

promiscuous practices. In the end, God Himself intervened to spare David's house complete destruction. But polygamy and its attendant vices of adultery and fornication are so closely associated with and are so clearly symbolic of the wickedness and the perversions of idolatry that deep and devastating corruption is consequent upon its introduction into society.

**The Bible informs:**

*“But King Solomon loved many strange women, together with the daughter of Pharaoh, women of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Zidonians, and Hittites; of the nations concerning which the Lord said unto the children of Israel, ye shall not go in to these, neither shall they come in unto you: for surely they will turn away your heart after their gods: Solomon clave unto them in love; and he had seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart after other gods; and his heart was not perfect with the Lord his God, as was the heart of David his father.” 1 Kings 11:1-4*

So similar to the situation with Lamech! Solomon achieved outstanding worldly fame and renown. His whole regime, though, was riddled with corruption. After his death, his magnificent kingdom was torn away from his offspring. It remains yet to be restored in the pure effulgence of its spiritual glory with the coming of the triumphant Son of David, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ!

Western civilization, nearly all of Christendom, seems to have been spared the social acceptance of polygamy. But, outlawed or not, the harem syndrome, the playboy mentality, the sinfully



sovereign spirit of promiscuity still finds a hallowed niche in the hearts of men. Surprisingly, in this age of opposition to sexual harassment and in an era of women's' rights, females often, if unwittingly, uphold or accept the idea of multiple liaisons for their own selfish purposes. Too many women find satisfaction in having men fight over them or by preening their egos as the preferred female among many contenders. Opposed to all this self-adulation, sexual deviation and gross idolatry is the simple teaching and example found in the Epistle to the Ephesians, chapter five, verses 30-33.

*“For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones.*

*For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.*

*This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.*

*Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband.”*

Among the many offices and positions in the Church, each with its own role and contribution to the upbuilding of the Body of Christ, I think there is no greater calling, no more powerful force for the cause of Christ than a simple, married couple wedded, first of all, to their Divine Spouse, but loyal and submitted to each other. God states that these two become one flesh. The flesh involves both soul and body, an oneness of minds and affections stronger than mere surface attraction and more intimate than

the closest physical ties. Such a couple; complete in their unity in Christ and determined to obey the leadings of the Holy Ghost, constantly provide an on-going, twofold witness to the Truth. Instant and agreeing in prayer, their lives become a platform for God's continuing presence and a provocation to call down His blessings upon themselves and others. The rebellious and disobedient, even though surrounded by friends and followers, are essentially loners. But "those who walk with God from day to day", as the poet affirms, "will never know a solitary way."

## 29. The Battles of The Lord

### REBELLION TOWARD GOD

Many well intentioned, sincere, dedicated Christians become discouraged owing to a lack of victory in their lives. They know about the armor of God and are eager to uphold the cause of Christ. Yet, despite their own best efforts and the advice and encouragement of religious leaders, they feel more like Don Quixote rather than the valiant heroes of faith mentioned in Hebrews 11. Too many true believers invest the majority of their time and effort in this cause or that, aligning themselves with some new spiritual movement or getting involved with some sort of “Christian” social commitment. While many of these endeavors, if truly sanctioned by the Lord, bring forth real, tangible fruits, too often the Christian warrior is left with the frustration of tilting at windmills. An undue reliance upon Christian traditions; a presumptuous acceptance of the counsel of others can keep a Christian perpetually busy, yet spinning his chariot wheels as far as real and lasting victory is concerned. A humorous sign I once saw read: “Make sure brain is engaged before putting mouth into motion!” We Christians could seriously paraphrase that advice by admonishing ourselves and one another that we had better really know where the battle is before we even begin to put on the full armor of God, let alone go dashing off to engage the Enemy of our souls.

Before commanding us to put on the armor of God, Ephesians 6:12 reminds us that “*we wrestle not against flesh and blood...but against spiritual wickedness in high places.*” 2 Corinthians 10:3 makes it clear that “*we do not war after the flesh*” and also that “*the weapons of our warfare are not carnal...*” It is not only in a few isolated portions of the Epistles that these foundational truths are affirmed, but the entire panorama of Scripture bears it out. From early on, in Genesis right through to the final book of the Bible, we see the same battle reenacted in various scenarios that together coalesce in what is known as: THE CONFLICT OF THE AGES.

### **Satan Wants to Destroy the Seed of the Woman**

Just as God has a perfect plan for our lives, so Satan has his counter plan to thwart God’s glowing promises and reliable prophecies, striving to make the Word of God of none effect. The Adversary’s overall plan is TO DESTROY THE SEED OF THE WOMAN – the One destined to bruise his head according to the thrilling promise, some call it the protoevangelium, of Genesis 3:15. The Lord Jesus Himself said of Satan: “*The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy.*” (John 10:10). If the Enemy of God and of our souls cannot achieve that grisly goal, he has a “plan B” ready at hand. Failing to destroy the Seed of the woman, Satan seeks TO CORRUPT THE SEED OF THE WOMAN, and all those who are truly united to Him. Corruption is part of his scheme to bring to fulfillment his arrogant, outlandish,

equally unattainable boast of Isaiah 14:14 “*I will be like the Most High*”. DESTRUCTION – CORRUPTION: the Scriptures are full of incidents and examples of this two pronged satanic onslaught. The serpent tempts our first parents hoping God will destroy them for their disobedience. Instead, an innocent animal is slain; its blood poured out in atonement; and its very skin used by a merciful, forgiving God to hide the shame, while the blood covered the very penalty of sin. True religion is corrupted by Cain who rejects God’s own example of a blood sacrifice; a sin (offering) that lieth at the door. Genesis 4:7 An innocent, righteous Abel is murdered while Satan hopes his “perfect plan” for humanity will be realized. If he can get any one of us to murder our brother, then, in turn, be slain in vengeance for our crime, he would be well on his way to destroying the Seed of the woman.

### **Corruption: Mythology/Astrology**

The use of corruption in this ongoing conflict of the ages is most powerfully exemplified by the Enemy’s introduction of mythology and the perversion of astrology as succinctly described in the book of Genesis, chapters 6-11. The references to the nephilim (the fallen ones) or, better, to the rephaim (the dead, deceased ones) are those weird offspring called “giants” or “men of renown”. They were actually the product of some strange union between spiritual beings and human females! THE LIVING BIBLE, in Genesis 6:4-5, describes this fatal, far reaching phenomenon.

*“In those days, and even afterwards, when the evil beings from the spirit world were sexually involved with human women, their children became giants (nephilim), of whom so many legends (mythology) are told. When the Lord saw the extent of human wickedness, and the trend and direction of men’s lives were only towards evil, He was sorry He had made them. It broke His heart.”* It is most important for Christians to appreciate this supernatural, demonic source of the world’s corruption and not attribute universal wickedness solely to man’s moral failure. If we take a close look at Isaiah 26:14 we encounter these same “giants” (rephaim). Here we see the awful implications of the existence of a supernaturally unique “mixed breed” These “giants” are neither fully angelic, nor are they truly human! They were the progeny of the fallen angels. As such *“They are dead, they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise; therefore hast thou visited and destroyed them, and made all their memory to perish.”* If we can understand the awful reality and the extensive implications of this early “battle” of the nephilim, then we can appreciate the absolute necessity of a universal flood to preserve the purity of the human race. God’s glorious plan of salvation applies only to fallen humanity; not to breeds or races that are purely the products of satanic intervention.

The wonderful Plan of Redemption includes human beings created by God and all animal, plant and inanimate beings that are truly “the works of His hands” and come under the purview of His redemptive powers. The doctrine of ultimate reconciliation, which teaches that Satan and his coteries will eventually be

saved, is just as much a perverted myth as all the silly sagas of Mount Olympus; the fanciful deeds of derring-do connected to the so-called Greek and Roman “gods”. Scripture also reveals that another irruption or invasion of this same “spiritual wickedness in high places” occurred just prior to the call of Abraham and God’s preparations for establishing His people in the land of Canaan. When Satan discovered that Abraham was chosen the father of all believers and given the Promised Land another satanic deluge of “giants” took possession, not of the whole earth, but mainly occupied the land of Canaan. The Canaanites who “*were then in the land*”, as Genesis 12:6 tells us, were the same kind of “giants” as those before the Flood. They were also the descendants of fallen angels. They, too, were quite capable of completely corrupting the godly line of real humans that had come down from Noah. No wonder that God sternly forbade any intermarriage between His chosen people and this fallen race. How necessary it was for these “dead ones” to be removed by the sword of Israel just as the previous “giants” had been destroyed by the Flood! The Bible also describes some of the nephilim as beings of gigantic proportions (like Goliath) and capable of superhuman strength. Most likely, legends surrounding the stature and exploits of these “supermen” were distorted in transmission and formed the basis for the stories of mythology found in so many cultures but immortalized through classical education.

### **Conspiracy: The Tower of Babel**

Another conspiracy of corruption involves the story of the Tower of Babel and the blatant perversion of ancient revealed truths. Genesis 1:14 tells us that God created lights in the firmament of heaven “... *for signs and for seasons, and for days, and years.*” Psalm 19:1 affirms that the heavens declare the glory of God. A study of twelve constellations, beginning with Virgo (the virgin) and ending with Leo (the Lion [of the tribe of Judah]) clearly and correctly tells the story of “*The Coming One*” (even Jesus)! This ‘witness of the stars’ is a continual reminder that God always employs a two-fold witness to confirm His revelations. Verse 7 of Psalm 19 speaks of the Law (God’s teaching through the Scriptures) as His other witness here on earth. Besides showing man how vain and arrogant it is for him to aspire to reaching Heaven (God) using his own strength and ingenuity, the Tower of Babel might very well solve another ancient mystery. Although most versions of the Bible describe the tower as one “*whose top may reach heaven*” (Gen.11:4), the original Hebrew states: “*and its top with the heavens*”, i.e. with the zodiac depicted on it. Evidently, such towers were fairly common in the ancient world. A different perspective, a shift of emphasis implying that the zodiac depicts, not the story of “*The Coming One*”, but, rather, the story of each individual human being this could easily change a beautiful, edifying, comforting promise of God to all mankind into a confused, unreliable, gullible fantasy about one’s personal destiny. Whether the satanic lie was sown in one startling incident or it developed over a period of time, the truth of the



matter is that God's simple, perfect, precious astronomy was quickly corrupted into a false system of bogus astrology.

A very precious promise found in Isaiah 4:5 states: "*And the Lord will create upon every dwelling place of mount Zion, and upon her assemblies, a cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of a flaming fire by night: for upon all the glory shall be a defense (a canopy)*". May the gleaming brightness of each day and the darkened velvet canopy of the night sky, both of which declare the glory of God, be a continuing comfort and an ongoing teaching and reminder of God's merciful and marvelous providence.

## 30. Pharaoh of Egypt and Haman The Amalekite

### Heralds of Holocaust (518bc)

Genocide, says my dictionary, is the deliberate and systematic destruction of a racial, political or cultural group. This horrific crime against humanity is one of Satan's most sophisticated instruments to make the Word of God of none effect. If this travesty is directed against God's people, the Jews, and prevails, most of the prophecies and promises in the Bible would never come to pass; would never achieve fulfillment. One of the most baneful effects of the entire destruction of this particular people is that this form of genocide would give Satan grounds for accusing God to be a liar. The race, the line from which the Seed of the woman sprung would be completely eliminated. Satan would have foiled God's plans. His head could never be bruised. His person and power would remain secure. The Enemy of men's souls would be forever triumphant. This horrendous state of affairs, of course, can never take place. God will not allow this disastrous turn of events ever to happen. But the Evil One has attempted genocide in the past and, assuredly, he has plans for it in the future.

It is not only the Jewish race that has been threatened with complete annihilation. From 1894 through 1915 the Turks sporadically massacred the Armenian peoples. Saddam Hussein

of Iraq has tried to deliberately destruct the Kurds. Both Kurds and Armenians are ancient peoples whose continued existence could somehow lineup with the complete fulfillment of scriptural prophecies. In Serbia, it went by the name: 'ethnic cleansing'. The spirit of genocide and the ongoing destructive forces of Satan are promoted whenever humans lash out against their fellow man and angrily propose the elimination of any nation or ethnic group. Genocide is Satan's most powerful and profound solution to the human problem complete destruction; total annihilation!

### **The Pharaoh Tried First**

According to Exodus, chapter one, verses 15-17, the Pharaoh of Israel's oppression in ancient Egypt, probably Rameses II, was used by Satan in an attempt to eradicate the entire Jewish race.

*The Bible tells us: "And the king of Egypt spake to the Hebrew midwives, of which the name of one was Shipprah, and the name of the other was Puah: And he said, when ye do the office of a midwife to the Hebrew women, and see them upon the stools, if it be a son, then ye shall kill him: but if it be a daughter, then she shall live. But the midwives feared God, and did not as the king of Egypt commanded them, but saved the children alive."*

I'm sure the reader can see through this subtle satanic plot to systematically destroy the Chosen People completely. Pharaoh was merely Satan's human agent to command the planned execution of every Hebrew child of masculine gender born from that time on. If the midwives had obeyed the king's command and

killed every male child, as his law decreed, it would only be a matter of time before the entire race would eventually die out. God Himself had to intervene in this disastrous situation. He gave the Hebrew midwives the courage and determination to disobey this ruthless leader's murderous orders. God also inspired these God-fearing nurses with a ready response for the royal inquisitors so that their jobs would be protected and the safety of their charges would be secured. When Satan saw that his perfect plan of genocide was failing, he resorted to another tactic. Instead of killing off God's people directly, he prompted Egypt's rulers to overwhelm the Jews by reducing them to menial slaves, forcing them to serve with rigor and making their lives bitter with hard bondage. This increased oppression, of course, eventually turned on the oppressors. God raised up Moses to deliver His people from bondage and lead them to the Promised Land. Satan not only failed to destroy them. Pharaoh, his agent, lost his entire slave population. But, People of the Word, whether Jew or Gentile, should not at all be surprised that the Enemy of their souls would seek to destroy them. Failing extinction, he plans to make their lives as difficult as possible.

### **Haman did it in Persia**

Another biblical figure with genocidal tendencies, lesser known but no less powerful, was Haman. His name crops up in the Book of Esther. Some important facts about Haman are: 1) He was a chief prince of the Persian Empire. 2) He was an Agagite, which

means he was a descendant of the Amalekite kings. 3) He was the only person in all of Scripture to merit the disgraceful title, “the Jews’ enemy”. Esther, I’m sure you remember, was a beautiful devout Jewess who became the wife of Ahasuerus, the king. Queen Esther’s cousin and mentor, Mordecai, was a loyal palace official. But when Haman achieved his lofty position at court, Mordecai refused to bow before him. Mordecai’s recalcitrance in this matter was not caused by a rebellious spirit, a superior attitude, or by personal animosity. The simple fact of the matter was that Haman was an Amalekite and Jehovah had declared perpetual war on the Amalekites (see Exodus 17:16).

No matter the consequences this dedicated, reverential Jew chose to obey God rather than men. Risking great danger both to himself and his beloved cousin and queen, Mordecai chanced ruining his own and Esther’s careers. In retaliation for Mordecai’s insubordination, Haman sought not only to destroy him personally but connived to eradicate the entire race. Here is what the wily Haman proposed to King Ahasuerus: *“There is a certain people scattered abroad and dispersed among the people in all the provinces of thy kingdom; and their laws are diverse from all people; neither keep they the king’s laws: therefore it is not for the king’s profit to suffer them. If it please the king, let it be written that they may be destroyed...”* Esther 3:8-9

If Haman had been able to follow through completely with this plan of genocide, all the Jews would have been wiped out at this crucial juncture in history. The promised Seed of the woman would not have had the opportunity to enter the world scene in

accordance with God's eternal plan of redemption. Once again the Almighty intervened and turned Haman's destructive plot around so that not only were His people spared annihilation but great honors were bestowed upon his faithful, obedient servants.

### **Satan will try it again**

I describe these two scriptural incidents at length not as a mere exercise in recalling interesting events of Bible history. Through this series of THE CONFLICT OF THE AGES, I hope to show our readers trends and patterns that are clearly described in the Scriptures and have been played out in verifiable historical events upon the stage of world history. As well-intentioned as they may be, and however useful and enlightening the facts that they unearth may seem, secular anthropologists, historians and political analysts fail to connect their findings with the fact based spiritual revelations that only God's inerrant Word can provide. If we can grasp the beautiful comprehensive design of God's overall plan; if we can simply follow the unerring direction the Holy Spirit inspires through the revealed Word, many of the events of the past would make deeper sense. And current issues and concerns can be evaluated in the light of spiritual reality. Broad vistas of solid hope for the attainment of realistic future goals are graciously opened to us.

Volumes have been written about the First and Second World Wars. Even now, on television, PBS and the History channel are bringing archaeological findings of the remote past and the

pictures and newsreels of recent conflicts daily before our eyes. Experts in various and sundry fields evaluate the economic, the political, the cultural and social implications of all these matters. But who is there to guide us about the spiritual ramifications? Who is there to tell us what all this accumulated historical data really means? The Lord Jesus has sent us the Holy Ghost. And the promise is that He will lead us into all truth. We can look at the First and Second World Wars from a vast array of standpoints, but when we view these earth shaking events from a spiritual perspective what a deep and satisfying insight is given to us. From a purely secular standpoint the two world wars brought about significant geopolitical changes and shifts in world power. But from the prophetic viewpoint these mammoth hostilities at the cost of innumerable lives and profound human misery served mainly to prepare a homeland for the Chosen race. Even more importantly these wars created a worldwide atmosphere so threatening to the Jewish people at large that they would be forced to create the State of Israel and maintain for themselves the refuge of a recognized national state. A long line of oppressors from Pharaoh, Antiochus Epiphanes, Herod the Great, the Roman Caesars, the Holy Roman Emperors, the Roman Catholic inquisitors to Napoleon Bonaparte and Adolf Hitler have, each in his own way, massacred and sought to annihilate the Jews. Each has found himself “fighting against God” and has left a bloody trail of murder and mayhem for all the world to see. Yet, all was clearly forecast through the Prophetic Word in God’s Holy

Bible. All have been forewarned by “*The blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords*”. 1 Tim 6:15



## 31. Evil's Ultimate End

### Satan's Dominion Ever Shrinking

We have written on a handful of historical events and lives of more than a dozen Old Testament incidents in the series of articles titled the “Conflict of the Ages”. These satanic interventions focused on the negative aspects of these ordeals – the attempts of the Enemy to DESTROY or CORRUPT the Seed of the woman. If the Lord Jesus tarries (as they say) we hope to elaborate on all of these adversarial conflicts symbolically displayed in the lives of men and women recorded in the Old Testament and show how the battle for the souls of men raged on with even greater intensity after the New Covenant was inaugurated. Indeed, the CONFLICT OF THE AGES continues all through the Age of Grace, broadening and deepening even as we draw closer to the time of Satan’s temporary, millennial confinement (see Rev. 20:1-3).

Readers should be mindful that we write about these satanic onslaughts, demonic eruptions and spiritual “temper tantrums”, not to place undue emphasis on this age-old adversary, or to give him and his minions’ unseemly publicity. Rather, we strive to biblically refute the lies that surround and come forth from Satan. It is our intent to unmask his tactics and expose the deceptions about his non-existence, the myth of evil being nothing more than a vague, impersonal force, and ignorance of

the scripturally sound reality that Satan is an actual, but already defeated, foe. As born-again, Spirit filled Christians continually striving to be led by our Lord and determined to be obedient to the leading and promptings of the Holy Ghost, we can act confidently and rejoice in the simple but powerful truth expressed in 2 Corinthians 2:11 “...for we are not ignorant of his (Satan’s) devices.”

Not only are the Enemy’s schemes, ploys and tactics open to us as we advance on our pilgrim way but the very beginning and the ultimate destiny of Satan is clearly manifested in the revealed Word of God. Lucifer’s once exalted position, his choice of rebellion rather than submission to God, the ever constrictive arena of his field of activity, his legal defeat at Calvary, his limited range of action during the Age of Grace, his expulsion down to the confines of this earth, his imprisonment in the Bottomless Pit and his final destruction in the Lake of Fire – all these momentous, spiritually historical, scripturally prophetic, very real events are vividly described in the Holy Scriptures. A limited, concise, but very graphic picture of Satan’s entire enterprise, from initial rebellion to ultimate destruction can be summed up in one, simple, but rather comprehensive, image. If you can visualize a simple triangle turned upside down with its broad base at the top and its narrowing sides coming to a sharp point at the bottom, you have a geometric description of Satan’s ever-decreasing sphere of activity. The wide area at the top of this imaginary triangle would represent the realm of God when, as Lucifer, Satan was still in fellowship with his Creator. Just one

verse from Ezekiel 28 gives us the “feel” of his intimate and exalted relationship with God. *“Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth: and I have set thee so: thou was upon the holy mountain of God; thou has walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.”* vs 14 We all know of Lucifer’s rebellion and the angelic hosts who sided with him against God. In Luke 10:18 the Lord Jesus Himself tersely, pointedly refers to the consequences of Satan’s tyranny. *“I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.”* We don’t know the exact boundaries of the Enemy’s present venue. From the book of Job we learn he has limited access to the presence of God but it seems that the realm of the created universe is currently his principal domain. Ephesians 2:2 calls him *“... the prince of the power of the air.”* The converging sides of our mythical triangle narrow still further as we learn from the book of Revelation. The converging sides of our mythical triangle narrow still further as we learn from the book of Revelation that Satan’s operations will be confined to this earth during the time of the Tribulation. Revelation 12:12 ominously warns: *“Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea; for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth he has but a short time.”*

We are almost to the triangle’s piercing point as we enter that phase of Satan’s doomed career that is described in Revelation 20:1-3. *“And I saw an angel come down from heaven having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. And cast him into the bottomless pit,*

*and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.*” The words, “seal” and “season” strike a nostalgic chord in my heart every time I read this poignant description of good triumphing over evil. “No sadder words of tongue or pen than these – it might have been”, a sniveling poet full of self-pity, once wrote. But here I have no sympathy for the Devil. He knew full well “what might have been” and clear-headedly chose to defy his Maker in spite of such lucid and eminent understanding. What I hearken back to is the glorious fact that we who are willing to be obedient to God through Jesus are established and anointed in Christ by God who seals us and gives us the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts according to 2 Corinthians 1:21-22. And we are reminded again in chapters 1 and 4 of Ephesians that we are sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise, the earnest of our inheritance, even unto the day of redemption. If we are willing to choose the path of obedience and submission, then, as long as we have breath we can amply enjoy “*the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, the love of God and the communion of the Holy Ghost*”. 2 Cor 13:14 What a contrast between the two sealings: the imprisonment of the Enemy of our souls, the very antithesis of the spiritual liberation of Christ’s disciples beginning here on earth and continuing on into eternity!

### **Satan Being Brought Down**

In the Gospel of Luke, chapter 4, verse 13 we are told that when the Devil was finished with the recorded temptations of Jesus “... *he departed from Him for a season.*” When we continue our study of THE CONFLICT OF THE AGES as revealed in the New Testament we’ll try to catalogue some of the nearly innumerable attempts by Satan to corrupt and even destroy the promised Seed of the woman, the Lord Jesus, the incarnate Word, God in the flesh! Our blessed Savior was harassed all His earthly life by the presence of the Evil One and miraculously repulsed his personal power, delivering countless possessed and oppressed souls from the bondage of demonic control. At the end of this age, as our citation from Revelation 20 reveals, Satan will be bound for a thousand years. Then, as the Scripture states, he will be released to resume his destructive work of deception. The one who left our Savior alone only for a season will be permitted to operate again, but only for a season. Even after the perfect rule of Christ over an imperfect world during the Millennium, a final divine intervention of fire coming down from God out of heaven will devour the rebellious hosts who, like their all too intelligent leader, can never be counted as victims.

Some years ago, I think it was in the 1920’s, a man named Coue made a fortune just by teaching people that they were “Born to Win” and by selling a program of positive confession and achievement. “Every day and in every way I get better and better” was his silly mantra. Over the centuries numerous schwarz seers or prophets of doom have peddled their philosophies of pessimism convincing the masses that they were “Born to Lose”.

Neither of these attitudes and approaches contain the right perspective on this serious matter of life's basic endeavor. The truth of the situation is that all of us are "Born to Choose". The Bible, personalized by the Holy Spirit, makes the right choices very, very clear to all those who believe on Jesus. The eternal truths, presented only for graphic illustration in the form of an inverted triangle, can remind us of the everlasting consequences that Satan, the rebellious angels, and all their followers will suffer.

**In the End: THE LAKE OF FIRE**

PART III  
THE FLESH

## 32. Deliverance: The Children's Bread

If we are to live successfully in Christ, Satan and his past influence in our lives must be thwarted. Of course, on-going repentance is key to reversing the process of sin and unholiness in our lives. But Satan is still the 'Prince of the power of the air' and he has great authority and power to influence our lives and actions. We must be aware of Satanic realities about us that seek to draw us back into his grip, even after we have become born-again. We may be inclined to think since Jesus dwells within us nothing, even Satan, can touch us. This is a wrong impression to have. He who is in us is greater than he who is in the world, this the Bible reassures us is true. But this is not to say that Satan is inactive. Far from it. After Calvary Satan became like a wounded bear. He is out of control with fear, rage and hatred. As his time of judgment draws nearer and nearer so his wrath and desperation increases. He will not fail to pull out all stops trying to destroy the works of God whenever and wherever he can. (Rev. 12:12) He will use 'once-true' ministers of Christ, who have sold out the Gospel, whether with malice and intent, or by defaulting to lust and cares of this world; or for whatever reason (money, power, hate, jealousy, intellectualism, convenience, selfishness, fear – you get the idea) to depart from the faith. They will be putty in his hands; he then is able to channel seducing spirits through them so that his false seducing spirits of light, can wheedle their way into the hearts and souls of believers sowing heartworms of



death. There, the devils boldly plant their highly deceptive doctrines among the sleeping, oblivious flocks of the churches of Christ.

*“Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;*

*Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;*

*Forbidding to marry, [and commanding] to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.” 1 Tim. 4:1-3*

This is only one of Satan’s strategies. We are told that if we resist the Devil he will flee from us. We must therefore, conclude, that if a Christian does not resist Satan, he will not flee from him. Resistance to Satan comes by different means and forms. The believer must be resistant and actively oppose the works of the Devil, not by word only, but by his life and deeds. If one resists Satan and is walking daily in the spirit that person will not be sinning. It is not possible to walk in the Spirit of Christ and sin. The Spirit of God does not sin – ever; cannot sin, it makes no sense to say or think that God can sin. It is an immutable contradiction. One of the reasons why God came in the flesh was to destroy the works of the Devil. *“He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the*

Devil.” 1 John 3:8 In other words, Jesus came to destroy sin and to save sinners from sinning.

If we are to turn away the first sinner, Satan, from leading us into sin, we must wear at all times the armor of God, which is a metaphor for being a soldier in Christ, which makes one able to fend off the attacks of the ‘evil one’ and to promote the righteousness of Christ. We cannot know when Satan will appear at our doorstep, whispering in our ear, to try to distract us, or destroy, rob or kill. Satan’s strategies are many and clever. But we are told in the Bible that we can be schooled, made aware of all his slippery devices and stratagem to steal us away from abiding solidly and continually in the love of Christ. And, this is his main object, to steer us away from Christ’s love living within us which is by definition without sin wherever His Spirit exists unimpeded. “Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee.” 1 Tim. 4:16 Other means, such as understanding the true ‘doctrine’ of ‘laying on of hands’, keeping holy the sabbath, confession of sin and repentance from dead works, walking in the spirit and not the flesh, being washed by the pure water of the Word, relying on the Name of Jesus, the faith for casting out demons in His name, and putting on the cloak of zeal as the prophet Isaiah declared (Isa. 59:17: “For he put on righteousness as a breastplate, and an helmet of salvation upon his head; and he put on the garments of vengeance for clothing, and was clad with zeal as a cloak.”) are among the ways and means by which Christians should learn to resist the Devil.

Christ is the Redeemer. One way in which he destroys the works of the Devil is to Redeem, or buy back, the wrongs that we have committed by our own sin and under the instigation of Satan's lies and seductions. The Spirit knows the things of the spirit and can reach into our past sins and deliver us from the hold they may have upon us. Satan is always there to accuse us before God, but Christ is always there to make intercession to the Father in our behalf.

Due to our past companionship with the spirit of the world, our complicitous dalliance with Satan, and our full involvement in sin, Satan still has legal right to harangue us, attack us and generally oppress us with his strategy of hate and deceit. We should not doubt this power which the Father of all lies still retains, though it is being diminished with every tick of the prophetic clock. He even had power to harass and tempt Jesus. He has not been entirely put away as of yet. We know he still has such power among men until it will be totally destroyed at the Second Coming of Christ. The Bible is clear in saying to Christians; *"Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour"* 1 Pet. 5:8 and in the Old Testament, *"There is a voice of the howling of the shepherds; for their glory is spoiled: a voice of the roaring of young lions; for the pride of Jordan is spoiled."* Zech 11:3 We must be on guard, vigilant and watchful. The battle is not yet over. Much victory is gained in the Christian life through deliverance. *"For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travails in pain*

together until now.” Rom. 8:22 and, “My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you.” Gal. 4:19

Deliverance is the friend and ally of every Christian who expects to have a close and victorious walk with Jesus. It is Jesus Himself who likened it to “the children’s bread” when He had an exchange with a Gentile woman who sought deliverance from an unclean spirit for her young daughter. When she asked Jesus to free her daughter from this afflicting spirit Jesus at first told her that He would not, saying, “It is not meet to cast the children’s bread unto dogs” Mark 7:27. But it was her cry for mercy when she responded that even the dogs eat of the crumbs from the children’s table that caused Jesus to reconsider and cast the spirit out of the youth. Whatever His reasons for saying this and first refusing, one thing remains clear: Jesus was saying that deliverance from evil spirits (and, we can surmise, deliverance from sin and oppression of all sorts) is THE CHILDREN’S BREAD.

We hope that each reader will embrace deliverance as the sweet bread and nourishment that it truly is. Since it is the children’s bread then it should be consumed by us like a little child eating a goody. We should not doubt its sweet goodness. If we want to grow into full and strong “adult” Christian, into what the Scripture calls the “*measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ*” Eph. 4:13. We must eat of the children’s bread, accepting the fact that we all need deliverance from demonic influences and spirits that are contrary to the Spirit of God. This is fundamental to our growth. All too often the Church has swept deliverance under the rug because it is not a “positive” subject.

We prefer, I think, physical healings because they are nice and there usually is no requirement to admit a sin is attached to them. But deliverance is a higher priority with God, thus a healing in our soul and spirit, our higher being. If we are healed of a broken foot and not delivered from our sinful ways and actions then we are worse off than if our foot was not healed. Are we not? We have gone from a sinner that could not get around to a sinner who can go anywhere without restriction. How does this help anything, especially the cause of God?

Recall that day when Jesus stood up in His own hometown (Luke 4) and told friends, brothers, fellow workers and church goers that He was sent to be the one true minister of God. He told them that six things would be basic to His ministry. He was *“anointed to preach the gospel to the poor, he was sent to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, and to preach the acceptable year of the Lord.”* You may also recall that, for this announcement of mercy and goodness of God, the people who were closest to Jesus in the town which He grew up took Him out to the nearest cliff to throw Him to His death. We should not kid ourselves. When deliverance and such things are brought to us by God our flesh reacts with bitterness and resentment. We are embarrassed, offended. What do you mean I have a flaw? What do you mean I need the hand of God to supernaturally and powerfully deliver me from the influence of evil that has overcome me? Like those who took Jesus to the cliff we are inclined to take this message and the Holy Spirit with it to

a cliff in our heart and cast it over the side. We should not be embarrassed. We should resist the temptation to sweep our personal need for deliverance under the rug. Deliverance is THE CHILDREN'S BREAD. Deliverance is a friend. It is God's mercy. It helps us to grow. In fact without it we can not grow to maturity in Christ. And deliverance is a lifelong friend which every Christian, young and old, strong and weak, experienced and inexperienced, needs to invite into their heart daily.

There are three enemies which try to undo our relationship with Christ. All three of these enemies must be resisted constantly as we negotiate our way through life waiting for the ultimate deliverance by Jesus from heaven.

**The Three Enemies Are:**

- 1) Satanic wickedness: i.e. Satan and his minions;
- 2) The World: i.e. all that it teaches and preaches to us from the day we are born.
- 3) Our Flesh i.e.: Self

Often we focus in on Satan when we talk about deliverance but it is much more involved than that. Though we all need deliverance from bad spirits we also need deliverance from the other two enemies. The Book of 1 John talks about the enemy of the world, we are told in Scripture that anyone who is a friend of the world is an enemy of God. The world engulfs us and subtly tells us good is bad and bad is good; its ways of pride and ego and selfishness are contrary to God's ways and the Spirit of truth and mercy and judgment. That is why God has said that His ways are not our ways and our thoughts are not His thoughts. But the

most vital of all these enemies to defeat is – ourselves. Paul speaks of this great conflict in Romans chapter 7. “For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. ... O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.” Rom. 7:18-19, 24-25

The apostle Paul touches on deliverance from these three different enemies in the opening chapters of three of his epistles. We leave the reader with these examples from the Scriptures to help show the daily need for deliverance from these basic enemies of our salvation. Colossians 1:13 says, that the Father “hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of His dear Son.” We can actually be delivered from the hold Satan has had on us, and truly be brought into God’s Kingdom. In Galatians 1:4 Paul mentions deliverance from the second enemy when he thanks Jesus “who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil world.” God can make it so we live as he asked us, as being in the world, but not of it. And finally, and most critical, we can follow what is declared in I Corinthians 9-10 and be delivered from ourselves. Paul told the Church that “we had the sentence of death working in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead: who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that He will yet deliver.” 2 Cor 1:9 If

we go to the cross we can die to self and it is the dead who are free from sin. (Rom. 6) We can walk with God without sinning thanks to the delivering power of Christ.

We must be delivered from ourselves, Satanic influence and the World's draw – today, tomorrow and every day. We must trust God to deliver us from trusting in ourselves. We must have the sentence of death “working” as Paul has said; “working” in us at all times. Do not shy away from the bread of deliverance. It is good and nourishing to our souls. Though it is contrary to our natural inclination it is one of the six things which God sent Jesus to minister to us. DELIVERANCE – THE CHILDREN'S BREAD INDEED.

*“He that overcometh shall inherit all things;  
and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.”*



### 33. King Uzziah: Reminder to Stay Humble

#### Everybody Has a Right to Their Own Belief... but

No matter how old or wise we seem to be in spiritual matters and in the love of Christ it is imperative to keep a spirit of genuine humility and reverence before the Lord in every stage of our walk. The older we get the younger we ought to be. We must become as little children, the Bible tells the believer, if we are to be perfected and in a state of good preparedness at His coming. Shouldn't we be found innocent like a child, respecting our father, trusting our Lord, relying upon his truth and grace for all things. The more we get to know Him the more we ought to realize how we know nothing, nothing except that which he educates us about and those things which we see and hear from the Spirit of Truth.

The pride of a man can cause him to lose his way. Take the example of a man such as Uzziah, one time king of Judah. Though Uzziah had won many battles for the Lord and though he had even "*done what was right in the eyes of the Lord*" we are brought to our knees by the sobering conclusion of his reign and life. Because of Uzziah's sin he was stricken with a horrible leprosy (the Old Testament symbol of sin) and was unable to fill out the rest of his reign. Uzziah remained separated from his family and people for the remainder of his life, a man who had become full of

himself ended up living by himself because he had transgressed against the Lord through spiritual pride.

### **Uzziah a King Full of Himself:**

A living lesson that none of us think more highly of ourselves than we ought. No matter how mature we get, or how long we have walked with the Lord we must never get too big for our britches. The life of king Uzziah is a reminder for Man, as it says in Romans 12:3, “*not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think*”. The sad thing is that: it is written, Uzziah “*did right in the eyes of the Lord*”; ascending to the throne at the age of 16 he did some marvelous things which restored Judah to a nation of power and prestige. In a few short years Uzziah became a mighty warrior and established a mighty army for the Lord. He insisted on righteousness for the country and except for not destroying the idols in the high places, did all God asked of him. But that was not the end of the matter for we must keep a guard on our heart at all times.

After piling up success upon success Uzziah became full of himself. Until he put himself on a par with God’s elected priests usurping their role and ministry. Uzziah went brazenly into the temple, strode to the altar, and above the objections and warnings of the Levitical priests, began to offer incense on the sacred altar, despite the fact he surely knew what God had done with the sons of Aaron who had offered strange incense to God. Defiantly, this powerful king went ahead with his arrogant act of

tampering with holy things; and because of his arrogance and pride, Uzziah suffered this awesome judgment:

*“But when he was strong, his heart was lifted up to his destruction: for he transgressed against the Lord his God, and went into the temple of the Lord to burn incense upon the altar of incense.*

*Azariah the priest went in after him, and with him fourscore priests of the Lord, that were valiant men:*

*And they withstood Uzziah the king, and said unto him, It appertaineth not unto thee, Uzziah, to burn incense unto the Lord, but to the priests the sons of Aaron, that are consecrated to burn incense: go out of the sanctuary; for thou hast trespassed; neither shall it be for thine honour from the Lord God.*

*Then Uzziah was wroth, and had a censer in his hand to burn incense: and while he was wroth with the priests, the leprosy even rose up in his forehead before the priests in the house of the Lord, from beside the incense altar.*

*And Azariah the chief priest, and all the priests, looked upon him, and, behold, he was leprous in his forehead, and they thrust him out from thence; yea, himself hastened also to go out, because the Lord had smitten him.*

*And Uzziah the king was a leper unto the day of his death, and dwelt in a several house, being a leper: for he was cut off from the house of the Lord: and Lotham his son was over the king’s house, judging the people of the land.”*

The Scriptures say in the book of Proverbs, “The fear of the Lord

is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding.” We often put much, much too high a premium on Man’s education. We seek wisdom by way of trial and error, by experience, by the school of Hard Knocks, or by learning the crafty religion of the humanist intellectual, or learning sophisticated sciences at one of man’s universities. We seek wisdom and understanding in universities and within the cover of paperback textbooks. We try to pick wisdom from the fleshly lips of exalted leaders, esteemed thinkers, those who “*thinking themselves wise, [but who] became as fools.*” But the Scriptures tell us how to embark on the road to wisdom. It begins with a reverential respect and fear of our Creator. He knows. We do not. Not until He enlightens us and gives us sight do we see and understand. To know God truly, means we have tapped into the “all-knowing”; we have access to all the knowledge of the universe. Even the Bible itself is not just a book, not just a university – it is a Universe itself!

Solomon’s wisdom and understanding is legendary in history and they were given freely to him by God. In 2 Chronicles 1:10 Solomon asked God for wisdom and knowledge. “*Give me now wisdom and knowledge, that I may go out and come in before this people: for who can judge this thy people, that is so great?*” So God granted Solomon’s simple, humble request. “*Because this was in thine heart, and thou hast not asked riches, wealth, or honour, nor the life of thine enemies, neither yet hast asked long life; but hast asked wisdom and knowledge for thyself, that thou mayest judge my*

*people, over whom I have made thee king: Wisdom and knowledge is granted unto thee ...”*

Ask God for wisdom. Look to him for understanding, open the treasure chest of Christ, in which are hid all the wisdom and knowledge of life. Do not dare to think you know more, or know better than God, as King Uzziah did and lost the respect of God because of his foolish arrogance. All knowledge and wisdom, *“every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.”* James. 1:17

## 34. Our Ego Ought Not to Eclipse The Son

### For His Word Shall Not Pass Away.

Jesus is the light of the world. Every true Christian knows this and is quick to testify to it. It is written that Jesus is “*the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.*” John 1:9. Though the sun, that glorious celestial ball, was placed in the sky by God to rule the day, it is not the light of the world. Jesus truly is. But, if the sun is not the light of the world, then what is it? The sun is merely a temporary expression, used by God (the architect of Creation) as a tool in His plan to redeem man out of the far reaching ganglia of sin. The sun, the moon and the stars are really only physical specters of greater, truer, unseen, heavenly realities, Of course, Jesus knew and understood this and that is why He made this astounding statement, “*Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.*” Luke 21:31 & Mark 13:33

At first Jesus’ statement is a very disconcerting one until we begin to understand, by faith, that everything (not just the sun, moon and stars) which can be seen, felt, or touched are temporary tools in God’s hands. (2 Cor. 4:18)

**Everything We Can See, Feel, or Touch is Temporary**

We may find it hard to believe the statement above, but it's true – it's in God's Word. Even for Christians, this is very difficult to get hold of and to understand. That's right, most Christians miss the spiritual lessons that science and nature can teach them because they fail to understand that all the things in this physical realm are merely tools of redemption; and that only Christ and His life, and those things that are in Him will endure forever. All physical and material things are tools. Just tools. Jesus has promised that His Father will make all things new and every old thing will pass away. The heavens will be rolled up like a scroll, the earth will be changed, and the sun, moon and stars will no longer be needed. In that day they will be irrelevant, because God will be all in all. (1 Cor. 15:28) Think on it, saints. Give this a little thought. The sun is not the source of light any more than a light bulb, a burning coal, a bolt of lightning, or a cigarette lighter is. God is light and in Him is no darkness at all. (1 John 1:5). The annular eclipse of the sun is a perfect example of how God put the sun and moon in the sky in such a way as to teach us about Himself. But before taking a look at the symbolism of the sun and its relationship with the moon, let's see what God's Word says about His intended purpose in creating the sun and the moon.

The first thing God did after passing over the earth, as everyone who has read the first few verses of the Bible knows, was to say, "*Let there be light.*" That was not the moment when He created the sun, no, God did not create the sun, the moon and the stars until the fourth day. Therefore light is something else. Light is the other sun, the real sun, the eternal 'sun', THE SON,

JESUS CHRIST. It is interesting to note that the Bible begins by saying, *“Let there be light”* and ends in the final chapter of Revelation saying, *“And there shall be no more night there; and they need no candle; neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light; and they shall reign forever and ever.”* John 1:4 says, *“In Him was life; and the life was the light of men.”*

### **Light Comes From THE SON; Sun, Moon and Stars Are Signs**

So what is God’s purpose in creating the sun if he could have provided the light and means to sustain life? Genesis clearly states that God’s purpose in creating the sun, moon and stars was to *“divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and for years; and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth; and it was so.”* I suppose God could have chosen another method of making the earth a pleasant place for man to inhabit, but He did not. The sun and moon serve as constant reminders of the true light and the connection we are supposed to have with Him.

### **Eclipse Is a Classroom of God**

That brings us back to the recent eclipse which is one of those “signs” for us; this event was a unique and special classroom for the spiritually-minded believer; one to make note of and to marvel at and to see God’s great majesty at work. If we are



spiritually minded, and not carnally minded and confined to the horizons of this world, it is amazing what we can see. God has put the sun in the sky as a visible image of His Son, Jesus is the way, the truth, and the life. He is the life-giver and the source of all light. The moon, on the other hand, is representative of those who reflect the Son's light onto a dark world. The Church is like the moon. We, the Church, are to reflect the light of Jesus. How pitch-black it is when there is no moon out! But how bright it is, even at midnight, when a full moon is out. The sun and moon are for signs, are they not? Any dedicated follower of Jesus Christ ought to have one of his primary concerns be that he never block the light of the Son. It stands to reason that if we are following behind we will not be in position to block the light. But, like the moon moving in front of the sun during an eclipse, Christians all too often get in the way of the Son's light.

Many of us have viewed eclipses as heavenly pageants through welders glasses or by means of some special contraption we fashioned by our own hand. We watched as the moon seemed to make an egotistical crossing in front of the sun obstructing its glory. Though it was the height of the afternoon the sunlight diminished and an eerie grayish glow engulfed us for a brief few moments. Being out of the direct rays of the sun made our body feel a little like a chilled wine glass. Those of us who have witnessed solar eclipses before expected to experience both of these phenomena. A solar eclipse, of the regular sort, causes darkness and coolness. The darkness and coolness are symbolic of what happens when the light of Christ is diminished in our

lives. When we block the Son's light, love and truth are lost; darkness and coolness ensues. This spiritual correlation I easily made because I had previously witnessed and understood the spiritual implications of other eclipses during my born-again life.

The annular eclipse produced yet another phenomenon that took me by total surprise. Just as an annular eclipse is special for astronomers, so it can be a very special sign for the Church. At the height of the eclipse an onlooker called for me to look down at my shadow. It was blurred, like a double exposure. Two images, one lighter shadow surrounding a darker one, gave my shadow a surreal quality. Though my eyes are going fast, so to speak, it was the first time I had seen a double image of my shadow.

I knew a total eclipse of the sun, a solar eclipse, causes the earth to be shrouded in darkness, but I suddenly realized that an annular (meaning ring) eclipse allows light to sneak around the edge of the moon thereby making an unearthly twin shadow and I realized that we can be like an annular eclipse to Jesus.

If we get in the way of Jesus, even just enough to partly snuff out the light so that it only has a little space to shine around us, we will not only get a cooling and a peculiar grayness, but we will also cast a weird, perverse image of things onto the earth wherever we go. We are presenting two images side by side. One is us and one is Him. It's like mixing vinegar and water, they don't mix. It could even be a mingling of good and evil, as light with dark. How can it be, but something irregular and distorted.

**Do Not Allow Your Ego to Eclipse the Light of Jesus**

It is not that hard to allow our ego to eclipse Jesus. In the world ego is a pathway to success. In politics ego is a matter of survival. Psychiatry teaches us to cherish ego. In the Church, however, ego is an impediment to our spiritual health and welfare. We must be alert, as Christians, to not get in the way of the light of the Son. We must be sure our course, our interests, our selfish desires and ambitions do not get in the way. If we are followers of Christ we will, as the moon does, reflect His light. As the moon, we have no light of our own. As the moon, we have no glory of our own. We are created to reflect the glory of another, The Son. This is the intended spiritual sign of the moon. Again, the moon has no light of its own; it merely reflects the light of the world. There is no light in us, only the light of Christ which shines in us, thanks to the cross and its power. Our own will must never supersede or get in the way of the true glory of the Son otherwise we will cause darkness, coolness and cast weird images. When a church, a believer, a preacher or a teacher eclipses (hides or overshadows or distorts its image) the Son, then the spiritual environment will be perverted, just as the earthly environment is distorted during an annular eclipse. Stay out of the way of Jesus. Let His light shine and not your own ego.

If we mortify the deeds of the body, if we learn not to lean to our own understanding, if we are willing to die to ourselves, then Christ will live in us and His light will shine through us and we will not produce a double-image,

*“I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I*

*live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me.” Galatians 2:20*

We must let Christ’s light shine through us by dying to ourselves and letting Him live in us. Pick up your cross daily and do what Jesus suggests that the perfect will do – deny yourself. Hear God’s word and do it. You, who have Jesus living inside you, do not eclipse Jesus. Die, that He may live and shine in you. Die, so you can reflect the pure unmixed light of His truth with clarity and distinction. Get rid of any idea you may harbor that you have light worthy of bringing forth, so you will not be casting a blurry or double image. Make no mistake, the Light of the world, the Light of every man is Jesus Christ, THE SON. We should be as the moon reflecting only His light.

**SIDEBAR:**

An annular solar eclipse happens when the Moon covers the Sun’s center, leaving the Sun’s visible outer edges to form a “ring of fire” or **annulus** around the Moon.

In an annular eclipse of the Sun, the Moon casts its **antumbra** – the outer part of the Moon’s umbra – on the Earth.

Like total solar eclipses, annular solar eclipses can be seen as partial eclipses from locations inside its penumbra, but outside it’s antumbra.

Annular solar eclipses take place only when:

- The Moon is a new Moon.
- The Moon is at or near a lunar node.

- The Earth, Moon and Sun are perfectly aligned in a straight line.

The Moon is at its apogee.

(definition from [timeanddate.com](http://timeanddate.com) )

It is interesting to note that the Bible begins by saying, “*Let there be light*” and ends in the final chapter of Revelation saying, “*And there shall be no more night there; and they need no candle; neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light; and they shall reign forever and ever.*” John 1:4 says, “*In Him was life; and the life was the light of men.*”

The annular eclipse produced yet another phenomenon that took me by total surprise. Just as an annular eclipse is special for astronomers, so it can be a very special sign for the Church. At the height of the eclipse an onlooker called for me to look down at my shadow. It was blurred, like a double exposure. Two images, one lighter shadow surrounding a darker one, gave my shadow a surreal quality. Though my eyes are going fast, it was the first time I had seen a double image of my shadow.

I knew a total eclipse of the sun, a solar eclipse, causes the earth to be shrouded in darkness, but I suddenly realized that an annular (meaning ring) eclipse allows light to sneak around the edge of the moon thereby making an unearthly twin shadow and I realized that we can be like an annular eclipse to Jesus.

If we get in the way of Jesus, even just enough to partly snuff out the light so that it only has a little space to shine around us, we will not only get a cooling and a peculiar grayness, but we will

also cast a weird, perverse image of things onto the earth wherever we go. We are presenting two images side by side. One is us and one is Him. It's like mixing vinegar and water, they don't mix. It could even be a mingling of good and evil, as light with dark. How can it be, but something irregular and distorted.

## 35. Love Not The Flesh

### The Pride of Life

How many times have we said this to ourselves and others? “I’m a good person.” I think we have all heard people, including ourselves, state that they have worked very hard to build a “good life” for themselves. There is a gospel hymn that says: “I wanted all things, that I might enjoy life. But Jesus gave me life, that I might enjoy all things.” These words are so true and perhaps a key to understanding this passage from the scriptures; “*Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.*” 1 John 2:15-16

The pride of life encompasses many areas that have become a source of man’s worship of himself. When a man begins to worship the creation rather than the Creator it is idolatry. When a man is unable to cease from the works of his own hands to observe a Sabbath this, too, is sinful. Anything that would separate us from the love of Christ is probably the result of the lust of the flesh, lust of the eyes, or the pride of life. In order to be delivered from the pride of life, we must seek to put on the mind of Christ, and put off the former man, no matter what temptations are working in our lives. This begins when we “*seek first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness.*” One by one, all of

the distractions of the world will become less of a priority, and listening for God's voice will be your first thought. Serving the Lord will be your heart's desire, no matter how He calls you to do that. It may not be according to the conventions you have seen or heard before, but in time you will see the perfection in all that He calls you to do. Peace will begin to abound in your heart and spill over into your home and your relationships if you want to be freed from the pride of life and the natural grip it has on every person.

### **Our Roots: A Source of Pride**

Let us examine more closely some of those areas in life that may seem noble, but could turn out to be nothing more than a lie, in the form of the pride of life. The Bible is full of genealogies and most people are curious to know where their ancestors came from and what they accomplished. America is the great melting pot, and many here identify themselves more by their ethnic background, rather than as an American. To the world, we could even be considered mongrels, partly because we hold so much stock in our ancestors and their roots. It is a source of personal pride for many. God too is interested in backgrounds and especially genealogies, but for a different reason. Why were those long genealogies included in the divine word of God? They are difficult to read. Then the Lord gave me the revelation that it was all about establishing Jesus as the rightful heir to King David's throne. Spiritually speaking, Jesus earned it by being God's only



son. He purchased the right to the throne as well as the lives of all who would believe in Him, by willingly spilling his blood on the cross. But for the sake of God's promises to the Jews (His chosen people) it was also necessary to establish Jesus as a descendant of King David. God had promised that the King of the Jews would come through the bloodline of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob... and David. Salvation is through a single seed, not seeds, is the way the Bible puts it.

Satan, always the one to pervert God's word in an attempt to nullify the prophecies contained in it, has tried to divert attention away from the one true genealogy that we should take stock in and throw it on to our own fleshly ancestors. In this, Satan has succeeded in making mankind believe that our natural genealogy really matters and is something to be proud of, but in truth, the only inheritance that will not pass away is the spiritual inheritance we receive from Jesus Christ, when we accept him as our Lord and Savior.

### **Our Own "Creations" Can Cause Pride**

It is only natural for new parents to be proud of their new baby. First time parents tend to be exceptionally proud of their offspring. More seasoned parents can be made weary from listening to the new parents enthusiastically tell about the first laugh, or the first words, etc. This is one more thing that Satan can use to subtly fill our hearts with the pride of life in our own little creation. The bubble bursts for most parents around age

two, when the child displays a willful determination to be himself, and leaves off being the perfect little angel the parents first saw.

If parents hold on to the notion that their child is somehow special or above normal, they could invite serious spiritual consequences upon the child. The child could grow up to believe he doesn't need a savior or that he is somehow above the law and not subject to it. If that is the case, then the child is on a course charted for destruction, save God's divine intervention. Parents need to be especially careful not to allow a child to think more of himself or herself than he or she ought to. The best thing a parent can instill in a child is a godly fear of the Living God. For babies, that should normally begin as a godly fear of their own father until they can begin to comprehend that God is the Father of all those who will obey Him.

### **Laboring in the World Without Resting in God**

It is no secret to me why the Lord wrote into His Law the need to observe the Sabbath. Men and women can so easily become consumed by their own labors that they won't quit working until there is a crisis, or their bodies begin to fail them from exhaustion. How many of us are running around constantly trying to get "caught up" when it is impossible to accomplish everything we put on ourselves? What the Lord desires for us is to be caught up in the wonder of His great love and to contemplate what He tells us in the Scriptures and in His still small voice. How can we ever hear from Him if we won't cease from our own labors?

Today, as in the past, what job a person does tends to define him in society. In that identity, many people tend to derive pride in the work they do. Some can even derive deeper pride in seeing something concrete in the fruits of their labors. Men have perceived themselves as master builders and rulers over all they survey. King Nebuchadnezzar stands as a Biblical example of one who had a severe case of the pride of life, and this was not without good reason; his kingdom was one of the greatest in history. God had to show Nebuchadnezzar who truly had the power of life and death in His hands by debasing him to the extreme of turning him into a demented animal.

*“At the end of twelve months he walked in the palace of the kingdom of Babylon.*

*The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honor of my majesty?*

*While the word was in the king’s mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; the kingdom is departed from thee.*

*And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will.*

*The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were*

*grown like eagles feathers, and his nails like birds claws.  
And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the most High, and I praised and honored him that liveth for ever and ever, whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom is from generation to generation:  
And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing and he doeth according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou?  
At the same time my reason returned unto me; and for the glory of my kingdom, mine honour and brightness returned unto me; and my counsellors and my lords sought unto me; and I was established in my kingdom, and excellent majesty was added unto me.  
Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all whose works are truth, and his ways judgement: and those that walk in pride he is able to abase.” Daniel 4:29-37*

### **Materialism: A Form of Pride of Life**

In contemporary society, the pride of life can be manifested in materialism: the acquisition of material goods through the financial affluence people enjoy. Many people will work two jobs or, both spouses will work to maintain their standard of living. In their hard work they are building their own kingdom here on earth. If you are ever able to acquire all of the material goods you

need in order to achieve perfect happiness, why would you look to those things which are above?

All of these aspects of labor can distract a person from the one whom all these blessings originate. As it was revealed to king Nebuchadnezzar, God is the creator of all things and we would have nothing without Him. In fact, working hard can get one into an early grave, and even cause one to miss out on the eternal treasure which Jesus Christ has stored up for us. The cares of this world can also cause us to miss many wonderful gifts that the Lord will dispense to us daily by listening and being obedient to His voice. Included in those gifts are precious moments with our family and friends.

Several years ago, the Lord spoke powerfully to my step-father and told him to forget his father's house and his old roots and to seek out his new identity in Christ. If we are really seeking to be delivered from this present evil world, we would be wise to do the same. It is right to physically care for our children when they are small. We can hope to provide a stable secure home for them and to guide them to the truth in God's Word and in salvation through Jesus Christ. But ultimately, they all have to confront their own sinful nature and receive salvation, just as we did. If we could save them, we wouldn't need Jesus. Our little darlings are not our own creation, rather that of the Father. We need to keep reminding ourselves of that.

In the same vein, our labors are also given to us by the grace of God, and it is our job to fit into that and be thankful. It is also important to be thankful for His words to us and to keep the

“Sabbaths” which He offers. As Jesus taught we must remember that the Sabbath was made for man and not the other way around. If we will heed His voice, we can lead a happy peaceful life, resting in the assurance we are in God’s hands. It won’t be necessary to prove to anyone how smart, or talented we or our children are. And we won’t have to work ourselves to death, to keep up with the Jones’s. Then our pride can come in the knowledge that we have a whole new inheritance in a heavenly city with our Lord Jesus Christ.

## 36. Beware The S.N.A.R.E.

### They stay one from life itself

One of my favorite writers from an earlier period is Oswald Chambers. Before his death in 1917 he issued a warning that fit the circumstances of his own day, but an alarm that still needs to be sounded in this our present era. In his work entitled *Bringing Sons into Glory* he reminds us of some of the most conspicuous snares of Satan coupled with the insidious spirit of the world.

“The Kingdom of God is within you, uncompromisingly within you”, he writes. “We must never compromise with the kingdoms of this world; the temptation the Devil presents is that we should compromise.

We recognize the Devil’s temptation in the teaching that proclaims there is no such being as the Devil and no such place as hell; much that is called sin is mere defect he says. Men and women are like poor babes lost in the wood, just be kind and gentle with them, he will tell people, talk about the fatherhood of God, about universalism and brotherhood, the kindness of Providence and the nobility of man.

But the Lord’s temptations reveal where the onslaught will come. Today, through an overabundance of Christian activities, Jesus Christ is being dethroned in hearts, and Christian wit and wisdom are taking His place; consequently, when trials and difficulties come, most of us are at our wit’s end because we have succumbed to one or another of these temptations.”

Since the yesteryear of Chamber's troubled times, vast Niagaras of increasingly turbulent waters, so to speak, have flowed under the spiritual bridge called Christianity. The tenor of the times has radically changed and the supernatural snares, besides the ones he has validly pointed out, have become more subtle in direct proportion to the moral decay that has so deeply corrupted the "normal behavior" of the masses.

Over activity, misplaced zeal, undue emphasis on works was the principle bane of the Church in the fantastically optimistic era just prior to the beginning of the First World War. Today, too many people have been so thoroughly caught up in the promotion and worship of self that the immanent destruction implied in Ecclesiastes 9:12 seems to ominously overhang our contemporary society.

*"For man also knoweth not his time: as the fishes that are taken in an evil net, and as the birds that are caught in the snare; so are the sons of men snared in an evil time, when it falleth suddenly upon them." Ecc 9:12*

It was fraternization with the followers of false gods that was the fateful trap which ensnared the ancient Israelites and brought terrifying desolation, heart-rending dispersion, and centuries of sorrowful exile upon their radically rebellious actions and attitudes. At present, it is the idol of self that reigns supreme in most every arena of human activity. Now, the noose is not as slowly tightening as people vainly try to balance practical self-centeredness, even self-intoxication, with a theoretical attempt to still continue to love God and neighbor. Whatever belief



people may publicly profess, the reality of their work-a-day philosophy translates into “getting all the gusto you can get”; “you deserve a break today”; and the constant reminder that whatever the price, no matter the cost to others – “you are (definitely) worth it!”

### **“S” stands for Sin and Self**

S.N.A.R.E. starts with the letter “S”. That assuredly stands for sin, but, more specifically the source of so much sin and opposition to God, self. The biblical term for self is the “soul life” as opposed to the life of the spirit. In the Gospels the Lord Jesus emphasizes the dire dangers associated with undue attention to ideas, attitudes and behavior which are “soulish”, or self-serving. We are warned by Him to take no thought for our life (see Matt. 6:25/Lk. 12:22); to lose our (self) life for His sake (Matt. 16:25/Mk. 8:35/Lk.9:24 & 17:33); and even to hate our own (self) life (Lk.14:26) insofar as earthly matters and natural relationships impede or disrupt the Kingdom of God within us, i.e. the whole new creation we enjoy in Christ Jesus!

### **“N” is for Neglect**

Continuing in sin, motivated by selfishness as a practical way of life is destined to bring about the “N” word in our day-to-day living. “N” stands for neglect. However it is manifested, too much concentration on self has to carry with it some form of negligence. Unfortunately, this earliest of signs warning us that something is not right about our personal behavior or the manner in which we treat others goes largely unnoticed and, even if recognized, rarely corrected.

### **“A” is for Abuse**

Carelessness and neglect have come to be accepted as such minor infractions of social conduct that many people miss the realization that continued neglect of accepted duties and renegeing on attendant responsibilities will eventually result in the well-known, dreaded “A” word -abuse! It is here that society “seems to, appears to” try to uphold basic human decency. Self is generally accepted as fine. Neglect deserves its designation. Instances of neglect are of little consequence and should be ignored; except, of course, when one’s own ox is being gored. But abuse is another matter. Society claims that it won’t stand for any form of personal mistreatment. It gears up its forces to forestall abuse and even stamp it out. Sadly, abuse has already and longtime become a way of life for the family, the basic unit of our society. It has become so deeply part and parcel of personal relationships that emotional abuse has a measure of acceptability; verbal abuse is too widely tolerated; and abuse in its most outrageous, detectable physical form is frequently only temporarily restrained and not really abolished.

### **“R” is for Revenge**

“R” follows the letter “A” in S.N.A.R.E. and, just as inevitably revenge and sometimes even rage are the unavoidable consequences of continued real or imagined abuse. Retaliation, in one form or another, is bound to occur when abuse continues unchecked. With revenge, the lesser of the two evils, the victims pretend that “they don’t get mad, they just get even”. That deceptive attitude is supposed to justify the meanness that they

inflict on others; on the alleged abuser or on anyone who happens to come into the crossfire of their anger. Rage, whether it be steamy silent or explosively loud, is usually the aftermath of prolonged abuse. We need only look around us to see and hear about the increasing incidents involving monstrous acts and vengeful crimes.

### **“E” equals Exile and Elimination**

“E” is the last letter in our acronym. There is a terrible finality in the chilling words that symbolize this terminal initial. Like “R”, the letter that precedes it, “E” represents two possible scenarios: Revenge, which often brings about exile; and rage that sometimes ends in elimination. When relationships deteriorate to the point where the alleged victim is constantly engaged in some form of pay-back, all parties get exasperated and the inevitable separation eventually ensues. “I’ve had it with that guy” complains the worker about his boss and stomps off the job. The abused child leaves home; or becomes a stay-at-home runaway refusing to be a part of the family. Frequently these days abused parents secretly steal away from a renegade child, exiling themselves from their own flesh and blood. Couples separate, and in the divorce court charge each other with some aspect of abuse – mental cruelty used to be the classic legal complaint. The S.N.A.R.E. scenario and many of its consequences are at least temporarily involved even in so-called “amicable” divorces. Although the most tempestuous, rage, can sometimes subside; if the causes that produced it aren’t dealt with, then mayhem and even murder can result from the simple, innocent-appearing

selfishness that turned into neglect that brought about the abuse that provoked the rage that sought to permanently eliminate another human being!

Like trying to solve the dilemma of “the chicken or the egg” the sources of selfishness, its many causes, and its principal perpetrators seem impossible to pinpoint accurately. Egotism creates an atmosphere that affects everyone it surrounds and has the power to draw the most detached person into its influence. Believers understand that behind all its varied manifestations lies satanic oppression that can be effectively dealt with only through deep spiritual deliverance. So Christians should be less concerned about exposing the sources of selfishness by accusing others and analyzing where it came from. Rather, they should make sure that they know for a fact where it is going. By that, I mean our main focus should be on recognizing selfishness for what it really is and being acutely aware of the terrible destruction that it can lead to. Then we can seek deliverance from its dreadful pattern of dangerous, destructive behavior, first for ourselves and also for others who need help to escape this regrettable regression and be freed from its fearful results.

As I began this article with a warning from a different era so I'll close with a caution that is applicable to all time, and especially to this present day. Concluding His parable about the most certain sign of His second coming (the fig tree sign signaling the re-establishment of Israel), the Lord Jesus tells us:

*“And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting (self-indulgence), and*

*drunkenness (including self-intoxication), and cares of this life (involving self-interest), and so that day come upon you unawares.*

*For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.*

*Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man". Luke 21:34-36*

What a tragedy it would be if Christians who so strongly and rightly protest against sin should suddenly find themselves strangling from the unrecognized effects of personal and social selfishness. We can be sure that if we don't deal with the drunkenness of today (no matter what form it takes), the cares of this life are bound to get us more deeply entangled tomorrow, threatening our worthiness "*... to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.*"

## 37. Flee From These Four Worlds of Flesh

### Flee From Your Flesh

There are four particular areas of sin – whole worlds in themselves – from which we are advised by the Scriptures to “flee”. For older mature Christians these four areas serve as a mirror to examine oneself. For those looking into Christianity and for the younger Christian, still learning to overcome, they are admonishments to righteousness, advice that can further circumcise the heart and set one on a pathway of victory of soul and spirit.

The true Christian journey is along a narrow and straight path. Divergence from that is inevitable, but one must get back on and stay on it. This path not only leads to eternal life but can bring us to Brideship, a great and perfect relationship with our loving God. But this path must lead us, must take us off the old path, the one of our own desired destination which unbeknownst to us is a dead end leading to nowhere but frustration and finally, death. No matter how much or how great – you can't take it with you. As the Preacher in Ecclesiastes ends his book our whole duty is to hear God and do what he says. If we do that we will escape from the snake pit in which we have fallen and find the silver cord of eternal life that can bind us unbreakable to fountain and source of life, Jesus Christ and God the Father.

This escape from death into life cannot be accomplished by any magic Houdini act devised by us or any clever man. Still, we must escape death, a departure from the chains of sin must be accomplished by someone, and that someone is Christ who can break the chains of sin that bind us to this World. The young Christian must realize that to begin the journey to the household of the Father requires that we leave our home built by nothing less than our own sin. We should know that there is no shame in retreating from these things, no shame in fleeing just as an honest man would who has fled a den of thieves and disavowed friendship with them. Nothing less than a godly woman would flee a house of prostitution, or a criminal would revel in being released from sentence of life in prison. When we think of winning a battle we usually think of aggressively confronting some foe face to face. Military men set out to destroy their enemy. Football teams go at one another head on head. Politicians assail their opponents without shame. Christians ought regularly to encourage one another to stand in faith and resist the Devil. We exhort one another to seek out opportunities to defeat the enemy *“by the blood of the Lamb and the word of our testimony.”* And this, my friends, is as it ought to be.

But when it comes to the adversary called sin and stumbling about in Satan’s unlit ballpark of lust and greed, there is no shame in making a hasty retreat. The Scriptures openly demand of us that we *“flee from these things.”*

The one whom God sent to prepare the way for the coming of the Lord preached sternly about fleeing from sin. When the

Pharisees and religious leaders of Israel came out to see John the Baptist in the wilderness, where he was preaching repentance, John scolded them loudly, “*O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come. Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.*” The pretentious men, who were trying to play both ends against the middle, were hoping to flee God’s wrath without fleeing the sin that brings God’s wrath upon us.

But those who want to please God are beckoned to Christ and thereby immediately and instinctively know that it is Christ’s will that they make a hasty and unashamed withdrawal from sin, so they can escape from the wrath that is to come and thereby make their “*election and calling sure.*” Those who are ready and willing to make a retreat from sin’s seductive arms are the ones John sought to baptize.

God’s word makes no secret saying: “*Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.*” 1 Cor. 6:9-10

### **Flee These Four ‘Worlds’ of Flesh**

It is no mistake that these four Biblical exhortations to flee are made to young Christians. Two are to the church of Corinth (an immature church in Christ) and two are to Timothy, Paul’s young protégé. These worlds of the Flesh are Fornication 1 Cor. 6:18



Idolatry 1 Cor. 10:14 Love of Money (Mammon); 1 Tim. 6:11 and Youthful Lusts 2 Tim 2.22

## 1. Fornication

In his letter to the Corinthians, that greatly zealous but immature church, Paul warns them to “flee fornication”.

*“What, know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh.*

*But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit.*

*Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.*

*What, know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own.*

*For ye are bought with a price; therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s.” 1 Cor. 6:16-20*

Christians must be careful of any form of fornication as revealed to them by the Spirit of God, pornography, adultery and the carnal sins that would cause them to be joined to anything unholy. Like drugs, fornication is risky business for it can take hold of us by habitual use, something which becomes stronger than our own Will.

## 2. Idolatry

Later, in the same letter, Paul warns the Corinthians to flee a

second destructive sin. *“Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.”*

He reminds the Corinthians that all those who fell in the wilderness after being delivered out of Egypt had eaten the same manna and had drunk from the same Rock. They had all been baptized by their passage thru the waters of the Red Sea. They had eaten the same spiritual food. But they were not all pleasing to God because they eventually fell prey to the sin that was nestled within their rebellious hearts. They had fled from Egypt, but not sin. They had fled from the wrath of Pharaoh, but not the wrath of God. They had fled bondage and servitude but not slavery to fornication, idolatry, evil lusts and the desire for worldly comforts and riches. They had not fled sin.

Idolatry takes on forms subtle as well as blatant. Telling Christians not to be idolaters, Paul quotes a curious Scripture from Exodus. *“The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.”* The people had shed God completely. They had decided to do their own thing and have fun doing it. Idolatry is coveting anything but not caring about God and His Will.

Flee not only covetousness, but flee anything that is put ahead of Jesus Christ in your life – because brothers and sisters – that is where idolatry begins, when we love anything or person above God. This is the genesis and nest where idolatry begins to live and take form.

### **3. The Love of Money – Riches**

To Timothy, Paul wrote of two things from which the wise Christian will flee. The first was the pursuit of riches.

*“But they that be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.*

*For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.*

*But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.*

*Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.” 1 Tim. 6:11.*

As the proverb says, let me not be poor so I have to steal and sin against God, and let me not be too rich so I forget about God. Flee the love of money and the pursuit of worldly riches. Such simple advice must be taken on faith. We must let the experience of God’s love and care prove to us that He knows how to take care of His own. God wants to usher us into a world of faith where we can truly know that man does not live by bread alone. Money cannot buy happiness, only Jesus Christ and His personal presence in our daily lives can purchase for us an abundant life.

### **4. Youthful Lusts**

The last instance of fleeing sin comes when Paul, in his

second letter to Timothy, exhorts his young follower to “*flee youthful lusts*”, and “*follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.*”

Youthful lusts encompass a huge world of pride, ambitions, addictions, self intoxication, indulgence, avarice, and on and on. Flee like you were fleeing from a swarm of killer bees, these spiritual cancers. All of these things are motivational drives lodged deep within our nature that are by their nature, uncontrollable. The advice to follow after God’s ways with those of a pure heart not only advises us to do the right thing, but it warns us to stay out of Satan’s ballpark, a ballpark that was once our home field and though we were the constant loser we always felt we were doing very well. The reader should not only be aware of fleeing these “fleshly worlds” of sin, but the Christian should take note of the Scriptures in the epistles and gospels that tell us to “follow after” something. Let us flee the flesh and sin and follow after God and His ways, moving toward the destination of our vigorous adventure, leading to intimacy with God. So, flee – unashamed. All Christians should be scared of being tainted in any way by these four fleshly devourers of the soul. Flee fornication, flee idolatry, flee the love of money with its pursuit of riches, and flee every youthful lust and self indulgent addiction. Then we can be free to follow after good things, healthy and strong in life, separating ourselves from worlds of Flesh that can so easily take hold on us.

Let us run the race and follow after godliness, charity, hope,

faith and those things that edify the Church of Christ. Let us follow after God “*with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.*”

## 38. Mortify Therefore Your Members Which Are Upon the Earth

### Deny the Flesh in Order to be Rapture Ready

Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of His saints. Now there's a statement that doesn't quite make sense to those who are eagerly looking forward to a life of everlasting peace with Jesus Christ. Do not the scriptures tell us that Jesus conquered death, it no longer having dominion over Him? Is not death swallowed up in victory, its sting dissipated by Jesus' death on the cross? Has not Christ now quickened us to life, who were once dead in sin?

Then what does this scripture from Psalm 116 mean? Let's take a reflective look. The Word of God is living. This we know. Jesus is the Word become flesh and that is why the meaning of scripture is many-fold according to what the Lord is speaking to us personally. It is not only fitting at Easter time, when all of Christendom celebrates the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ, but at all times that we really ponder our Savior's ultimate sacrifice on the cross. The pain and humiliation that He had to undergo, with that the total subjection of His flesh, leads us to consider that the death spoken of here refers to the death of our flesh.

The scriptures tell us this: *"For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall*

*die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live” Rom. 8:13. “Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry” Col. 3:5.*

The word “mortify” is a very strong word. Just recently while our fellowship was delving into the scriptures to find out what it really means to be a priest we came across the above scriptures and the word jumped out at me and pierced my heart. To me, for some reason, it’s synonymous with hate, absolutely hating the actions or deeds of the flesh. The definitions from a few dictionaries bear that out, but go a little further.

*Mortify.* Webster’s English Dictionary explains it as: to destroy the vital functions of: to subdue by severities and penance: to humiliate: to wound (of flesh). Funk & Wagnalls Standard Desk version gives us this meaning: to humiliate: to discipline or punish (the body, appetites, etc.) by fasting or other ascetic practices. To cause mortification meaning, for one, the ascetic practice of subduing the appetites and strengthening the will by fasting, etc. *Mortify.* Strong’s Concordance, relays the Greek meaning to be: to kill – become dead (cause to be) put to death and to deaden i.e. (fig) to subdue; be dead, mortify.

Are we not new creatures in Christ when we come to Him and give our will over to Him? Is it really necessary to mortify the deeds of the flesh? Yes, most definitely! It’s true, we become new creatures in Christ as soon as we are born again as it is written in 2 Cor. 5:17, *“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.”* So

why do we need to mortify the deeds of the body? Aren't old things gone and all are become new? If that were the case why did Paul have a constant struggle with his flesh? Why did he instruct us to walk in the Spirit so as not to fulfill the lust of the flesh,

*“For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh:*

*and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.*

*But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these;*

*Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like:*

*of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.” Gal. 5:17-21.*

Our spirits have, indeed, become new when we surrender to the Lord, Jesus, but our flesh, our mind and our bodies (which are corruptible) are the same old ones that we've had and that are destined for corruption. We must die to self, pick up our cross daily. Why? Because we are saved, we have entered into life and it is not about us; it is about others.

### **How, Then, Do We Mortify the Deeds of the Flesh?**

First we need to recognize the simple fact that nothing good dwells in our flesh, as Paul states in Romans chapter seven, “For I



*know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.” Rom. 7:18-20. By following the advice given in Romans 8:13 and Colossians 3:5, and desiring to mortify, subdue and kill the works of the flesh then we are well on our way to a life of peace and joy in the Lord, experiencing true victories over our nemesis – our very own flesh. Easier said than done? You bet! Simply the fact that the word mortify, remembering the definitions cited, is used in connection with gaining victory over the works of the flesh implies pain! “But if we rely on the Spirit of God we can do all things through Christ who strengthens us.” Phil 4:13.*

Secondly, we need to heed this advice, *“The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light. Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.” Rom.13:12-14 and “Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye. And above all these things put on charity, which is the bond of perfectness.” Col. 3:12-14. Just as often as we put on our clothing each and every day, let us remember to put*

the things of Christ on so that we will be equipped to be able to cast off the deeds of the flesh and walk in newness of life.

Lastly, we need to walk uprightly in the works God has prepared for us by, *"...denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works."* Titus 2:12-14. For *"we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them."* Eph. 2:10. And especially, *"let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works"* Heb. 10:24, while clinging to this promise for those who walk in the Spirit, *"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit."* Rom. 8:1

By striving always in these things, through prayer and obedience to His word as well, we can become more and more willing and able to mortify the deeds of the flesh, for it is not about us, but about others, then we may come to fully realize that *"Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death (spiritually speaking, in this case) of His saints."* Amen.

## 39. The Parable of the Lamb

### Killing In Our Hearts

There was a rich man and a poor man in one city, so the story goes. The poor man owned one solitary ewe lamb and the rich, respected, righteous fellow owned many flocks and herds of countless sheep and cattle.

The poor man loved the lamb as a pet. He let it eat from the table, drink from his own cup, he even held it in his arms close to his heart like it was one of his own children. You know how people can be with their pets. He was poor, but content with God's love.

Then, it so happened that one day a traveler stopped in at the home of the rich man. The rich man, instead of taking out one of his own flock to throw a party for the stranger took the poor man's little lamb, slaughtered it, dressed it, and had a fine feast with the stranger.

What should be done to that rich man when it was discovered what he has done?

Before you answer, know this: That rich man is you and me.

That's correct, but before you say, "Oh, Get Out!" Hear me out. Tonight when you go to sleep consider the parable for what it's worth. It has to do with Easter, though it may not seem so on the face of it. Be aware that you have taken Jesus, the innocent lamb and slaughtered Him for your own pleasure whenever you have

broken the Ten Commandments, done evil against God, failed to love your neighbor as yourself, or by generally satisfying your own lusts and desires at the expense of another. Every time you have hated someone, you who have thought yourselves to be rich in righteousness, you have killed in your heart.

The Bible suggests that you and me are outright murderers, that's right, murderers! (see 1 John) When we have gone off and hated someone it is as if we are killing them. Every time you have coveted another man's wife or envied his good fortune, you have been as the man who slaughtered the innocent lamb. So you and I stand together, condemned.

But know this also. There is hope to have the sentence staid. For even the wicked rich man in this allegory (but it is a true story) was saved from eternal damnation and judgment. The man was King David of Israel. King David, that's right! The king whom God greatly loved. The king, whose lineage bore Jesus of Nazareth, the ultimate Lamb of God that took on the sins of the world; the Lamb of God that was slain, the Lamb of God that we "good" people have slain in our hearts; was the lustful sinner.

For that dreadful deed (stealing a man's wife and having the man killed) David was punished; but God offered him forgiveness despite this despicable act. David had a heart to repent and it saved him from God's terrible justice because God is a merciful God. That is why God sent His only Son to die for us, because He is merciful.

If you have not already repented of your covetousness, hatred, envy, deceit, or greed you can be like David and turn this day into

Easter, even if it is the 30th of whenever. Turn to God. Turn this day, this night into Easter. Come to Jesus, the Lamb of lambs.

Be as the poor man and give your heart to the Lamb. Come to Jesus. The Lamb lives. If you will come to him and admit your unrighteousness and ask for forgiveness, He will come into your heart and make you a new creature. Admit to Him that you are poor in the ways of God. He will not make you ashamed, but He will restore joy, peace, happiness and an abundant life to you, not only in this world but in the world to come. Come to Jesus.

If you are as so many Christians are, who have not forsaken the sins of the Flesh, we recommend that you do so, and trust Jesus to help you to forsake relying on them for they do not enhance your happiness or allow you a stable emotional life.

**THE LAMB LIVES!**

This is where you can add appendices or other back matter.